

(Adultery)

Feraligator(I know the two,our masters/don't you know me brothers sisters/our masters both tried to catch me up/then they fake-fought over me for nothing just to hook up/so cute together they are you see and know in front of you/then too ever

giggling,always teasing,ever happy couple the two)

Kingler(you know the romance that sprouts so fast/you know that i've known them from beginning to hast/ever as a queen and a king eventual the bond/as usual

closure blossoms to them each other so fond/and the bond grows further blossoms into longing which makes them a one/every then ever now ever will they be nothing but one)

Glalie(i stayed here with you/you can see why/my master told your's/my romance Glalie's thy/I went to my master back/just to visit my old pack/and i want to be back please help/your master's a bit sensitive i need you help)

Crawdaunt(our masters as you can see are full of feelings/for each other hard is their longing/you may not know me so well but i know you all/my masters likes you as his ver own dolls/i want to dance around and have fun with you/allow me show how much like you)Lapras(alas sometimes as we do/as you know my

parents did too/we get angry on each other for no big matters/then we show that the other don't matter/please understand that that not true/our masters together is how it's true)

Squirtel(you can see,i've know you/i've known our

*masters old and new/they always fought just to
express their bond/they can't stand be separated
hand from hand/here you see what they are
doing/playing around as drama queens/its just a
joke so lets play the roles/i'm all yours unity is
goal)*

*Snorlax(you know i'm hungry most often in
general/so why don't you feed me when you calm
down my general/our masters just want a little bit
of fun/so they've arranged for this sweet sweet
pun/i'm hungry to play with you/we were here
before this ain't new)*

*Pikachu(Hey dudes,its me Pikachu/your old pal
surely knows what to do/lets have some more
play and laugh/though i'm of electric bluff/i can swim as
you'll see/lets play lets play,one two and
three)*

*This was their chorus and the whole place
erupted..I was actually*

*Golduck and Starmie just were so
confused that Ganger,Noivern and Greninja totally
fooled them snatching away all my pokeballs and
Ash shut the door..he set this whole thing up with
the help of my supposed helpers at the gym..he
has made sure that i can't talk with a gag and tied
me up with rubber ropes i'm not feeling any pain
but he made me sit on his lap and he's controlling
my hands and saying this..while showing his
phone..he is blackmailing me...*

"I've Cheated on you whenever I got a girl who had

any interest in me, while I was still with you. in Unova to begin with, I won from Sinnoh and then busted team rocket became proud of my achievements a bit more but my goal was the title. then there was a beeline of girls for me, one even pulled a stunt by kissing me in public to begin with. but that comes later. i spent times with many of them as much as possible in party's or hangouts, complimented them on their dresses, looks and personalities and may be battling skill. and you yourself know how many gym leaders were trying to get my attention even when i was a mere kid in jhoto. and i complimented them to see what their reactions are.. and you know what they were? they were giggling like they've got smitten by a bug and would sneak into bed. here, here are those (showing few pictures and contacts). then a few i respected truly and still was either trying to play tough girl stuff or just go to other subjects even with a frown, but that's the way i began. then i'll talk about pokemon. you know what i'll talk about? pokemons.. my pokemons, and the philosophy of battle. how you know your Pikachu can't use another attack? cause you really can't and so on. it was gibberish. then i'll see them fade out or get excited, hell a few was in absolutely the wavelength as me, but they were there, why cause i was a good trainer, i looked good, i was this and and, hell they said i'm caring, sharing and so on. why? cause they're infatuated with me. THEY

WANT ASH KETCHUM as friend, boyfriend, beau, in the bed, in the date, in the cafe, in the home, everywhere. but what Ash Ketchum are they hoping for? this. that is the flesh and the blood and the tears and the sweats, success, failure- they want Ash Ketchum cause they think that's all about me. but that too later. then certain friends of mine had a crush on me, why? cause i did something good when i was like 1 and they -5 years old and so i was their childhood hero. what is a hero? with who you can get into the bed anytime you wanted, whose there always. what is there always? the flesh, blood, memories, character, that's all. then such a friend, namely Serena, whom you've already heard of, again tried her hand at the kissing stunt and i never imagined that so i was too flustered to prevent- anyway. but then i'm sure what happened won't go down to the (FORGET Quickly) bin in her memory anytime soon, she knew me in Kanto since childhood and was as clueless as one may imagine so i invited her to tag along and then had to take care of her, coming to know a few days later perfectly that all she wants is the bed. but her parents know Professor Oak well and i had to tag along and i slowly tried to make her see me as her big brother which i thought i was successful in establishing but with me i guess once a playboy always a playboy, and she pulled that stunt to insult herself. i could see she not liking me talking with other girls and so on, blah blah, and then obviously we had to part so the

bonehead thought she could do something about it as a permanent symbol that's made of spit and saliva anyhow i send her off nicely only to later explain in these lines- "any that comes are looking for the dead body, they're trying to recharge the dead body as it'd show a few sparks due to their constant trials.but STILL its a Dead Body.I could've spat anywhere which if she tasted,would've got the same feeling if only she told me before,anyhow as i was saying,that body will not be Alive to return back anything that they might've wanted.and what was that?the bed,of course.but whether you're in the bed or battlefield,the Dead is not Alive,never will be.I've done this before just as i never thought that they were actually serious and later after our breakup,i wanted to challenge myself to see who goes beyond the dead body,and the answer was not to be got but to be validated,justified only.the answer is NONE.why? cause the body is dead not by birth,the body is dead cause it doesn't have to alive cause it as had it's life.random fans never got a chance to try to energize the dead,only friends of friends could,only to see how was the competetion.but the Dead Is Still Dead.i've been validated the truth that i've known for 7 years now,that the life has been lived and no matter what it's not comingback again. Now let me explain what i mean.there's been all these in the age group friend category that may be interested in you and so on.but they're all lumped together, they're Plural and then they'll always see

the Dead.

Death is that i have no interest in them.why?as i said what they see,similarly i don't care,whether they looked great that is the flesh the blood the pus the cough the spit the urine the stool the fat the smell the space the air-none of it.then there's this little things called warm heart,share,and so on which is attributable to anyone that gives hands a friend sitting beside the glass of water they can't reach due to heir sitting position.That's all.if they want me to die for them,i may,if they want me to fight for them,i may,if they want me to help them i may-and all can become i will given any situations,why? cause they're friends?then why won't i do the same for anyone who isn't?would i still help team rocket if they needed it genuinelyand not for other purposes? would i not give the glass to an unknown person just because the sitting position is not suitable by LUCK.LUCK is what it is that gives me the opportunity to serve them,if they think that is and its the same LUCK that enables or disables me at times.

I've my Mom,i don't have to be all these to her, I don't need to think even about it.my mom is my mom.that's the end of the story.

I'm not my achievements,character traits,body,emotions- and what i am is known to only my pokemons perfectly.you know why? cause they see me.that's my morality.why am i honest to them?why do i even need them?still you can do just about anything than train a bunch of them for

*your own gains.they can still not give me their
100% but they do every time and they know they
don't have to,i give them my morality but they don't
have to respond at all,yet they do everytime.why?
because they know me,not because of what i'm
but just who i'm.i don't hide that.they see me andknow
what i am,for me its the same.just moral
and honest about what i'm.and i'm no saint,i've my
weakness,my drawbacks but i don't hide it why
cause they means nothing.i came here and i'll
leave-birth and death nothing has any value
except my moral conviction in what i've or gained
that's all.that's what its about,plain and simple.*

*as i was saying about Plurality
there are few things that can be unique in plurality
but 3 things and singular and not unique but
actually singular*

*My Mom,all of my Pokemons and..
another person.*

*why is there another person? cause that's what
the person saw in me to being with and for me i
didn't have to do anything on my own to get the
person it was natural.it was there to have had,and
that's the answer that i got 7 years back but i was
stupid enough to not realize it's full implications
only coming to that later when i had a harsh
awakening as i was about to lose the person,.ithought i've
made mistakes but then i thought as
LUCK would have it,and i tell you its not only that,
there's some far beyond reach of anyone except 3
as i said in me is and that's me,that said don't do*

anything,cause then your're being immoral,FULL STOP.and I won't do anything,the Dead will remain dead,the 3 will remain 3,i'll remain me,myself...no action necessary if i know that what i actually am is right and enough all the time.

and i guess i don't have to explain to you who the 3rd is.but i'll give you clues.the person is a feminine and walking into me as did my mom and pokemons,no effort,nothing,yet instantly knew who i really was and later was only validated that's all.you see,i'll stay like this in this life whether whatever happens to that person,and if that person is not available,i'll make no efforts,none will see anything ever of my own view of that person,but i'll know down the line somewhere in infinite lives this closure is inevitable.Enjoy yourself Misty, don't waste away your life,i knowyou not as this body no matter what one thinks a cheating one or absolutely right is STILL garbage so are emotions and sentiments and heart and all that, you're none of that,just know as you already do and enjoy yourself.if you've got me you know what inevitability i'm talking about,if you haven't you still will get it.the bonds is there ever.Thank You."

Ash Ketchum just said those and has handed me over this note.Ash Ketchum of all people..i'm too dumbstruct to say anything,but my troubles and thoughts are a bit relieved as he didn't physically harm me.i'm yet to grasp his meaning but his note is so huge i'll read it later,i'm too sleepy...

I had a good 4 hour sleep..and is ready again to read this out..the Gym is shut for the next four days cause there's just too much going inside me..i shall swallow this long note first..how can a guy like Ash write this..i just need to go to the bottom of this...this is what he has written and didn't say..

"and now i know 2 things, I won't battle again, and open a farm may be which May suggested me jokingly doing many years back when she found my herd of Taurose and i know that that's what i would do now.why?cause i've just about realized that my pokemons as in the three has just walked into me and they i guess somehow know that as well and so i should make for what i tried to put my nose into and made a mistake..the right action for me is to be friends with them and other people and that's all..my mom is my mom..and now the 3rd..i made the mistake of taking a chance on this person,so i thought of getting that thing right..and i've done all i could and now to continue this,which only will be the fulfillment with my actions.

Instincts and Will->instincts will tell you to do this and that-go to bed with anybody and enjoy the stool and urine but will tell you that you're not doing so cause only you can and its not because you couldn't.they're not much reliable unless I'm the bossing them and I,Ash Ketchum say,i was in tune with my pokemons,i knew them they knew me,thats why i did what i did.what did i tell them

during training, enjoy yourself all the time no matter what at the end it doesn't make much sense..but i myself was foolish enough to not follow it by getting rid of this feeling, this desire for glory, though i never told that to my pokemons. what value does it have? who'll remember me 100000000...000 years later or even .1, how many of the past pokemon masters have i myself known about nothing compared to how many has been or will be, so i've done enough to make a living and that's what will matter. pokemons will remain as my friends, if they want to come along go away, always fine with me has been and will be. but if i were to be a monk i wouldn't have myself telling me i have my mom and pokemons and this other person..i thought my glories could be this other but i couldn't have been more mistaken in that and when i got a glimpse of that i pressed my feelings and emotions and they said that indeed it wasn't those it's a person who as the other 2 walking in me..so i have this 3..so i guess i'll wait..i fought with this person was jealous of thought i was better was proud of longed for didn't want to care for and what not..at the end of the day nothing mattered..the 3rd is the third i only can do what is right which i did and this is the end of the note with that the 3 is bound to happen somewhere now or later beyond lives, I would listen to my mind and heart combination not any individual but as a combination, which if i believe in will not lead me astray again being

*perfectly in synchronization.Final thanks for
patience and cooperation.*

truely,Ash Ketchum "

*i'm dizzy...what is this...but i just can't believemymself at all
what i'm reading and heard him say
that..i'll still require more time getting the full
meaning of it...what does he want...*

*i'm feeling much better now as i feel that i still will
have a showdown with Ash Ketchum later which i
need to forget him for the rest of my life,really i
must move on..i've invited all my sisters and
friends here at Cerulian Gym and applied that the
Frontier Symbol be separated as soon as
possible...i haven't felt this good in ages..and
strangely Golduck is acting as strange as he ever
has and saying he knew Pikachu or Noivern could
never have done any harm..i see how childish he
still is in the core..only if he understood human
emotion better..but no Ash didn't do anything
except forcing me to listen to his cold and sinister
voice and read that note which i don't quite get..
my sisters are staying here today as well but their
fianceses whom i've known since teenage-Tracyand Gary-
as they were friends or mutual friends
and my friends has had a great time and stayed
here tonight and now departed..all were so happy
to see me back being myself after a long
depression,about which i can only laugh now..Gary
told me again as he has to me and Lillie a
thousand times that "he's just not that type" and
also confirmed that Ash indeed has sent a letter*

relinquishing his Pokemon Master tag,told his pokemons he's not battling again in his life for any competition or challenge except for fun or defense if necessary and his pokemons strangely was rather happy and each gave atleast one of their attacks on Ash to make him go absolutely insane about it and ended up playing a fake fight with them all day yesterday which is why Gary was so let for the get-together and also said that Ash told the Taurose herd that they are farming and they obliged him and stampeded him,which he says is not at all right given it'll destory his hopes of farming and was up in arms with them beforethey just brust into joy and he also would be out searching for a suitable place,which Gary says may as well have already began as he was asking them about the prices of big plots,etc,well i'm only eaiting to meet Ash once more as i feel i should,even if for all the pain he caused me,he was my frist true friend i guess..Serena contacted me as i just about managed to calm her down cause she was sobbing and saying she doesn't know how she should apologize and said Ash is the greatest friend she has had and she almost ruined it and said as usual that she only wishes to be like him,which i told her was actually crazy if she knew what he was during his early days and even now,cheating on me etc,but she only frowned and said she never saw him misbehaving with anyone including Pokemons and knows about many things now and is like a textbook,which

couldn't help but to make me laugh pretty hard, much to her dismay.. Iris, Cilan, Max and Bonnie also contacted me and said they couldn't be happier and Dawn just left, she's in Kanto and came here to meet me and after i told her everything she just made her typical emotional burst and said as she always knew I can't hide anything if that's about Ash and said that she was very happy, i told her i just realized that I don't need to be depressed like i had been simply cause his memories were troubling me and that's all. i've only talked with Drew contacted me and said he was happy to know that i was much cheered up now, May is in fact in Unova for some family urgency with her Dad and i was surprised in fact that Georgio and Rudy, with whom i thought i was dating when i first broke up; they said a Pokemon Master is always unique just as the Gym Leader who's in the Legend books, which i actually got three months ago with this Gym.. but i just wasn't in the mood to go to the acceptance ceremony so they just sent me the title, i thanked them for their concerns.. Brock was all in tears said and he couldn't believe for all these years that i could've ever went through such a depressive cycle, he though hasn't forgiven Ash at all, Brock's girlfriend Lucy also came and she also was very happy to see me and cheered me up, also advising that i separate the Battle Frontier as soon as i can to save myself exhausting myself entirely... Lance, the Kanto Elite 4 called me saying he'll give special

care to my requests and would make sure that the authority quickly decides on the Battle Frontier Separation and also agreed that he also should request them to close the Cerulian Gym down for some time now..i really don't feel like doing anything now..a Elite 4 committee actually contacted professor Oak saying Ash will get into the Hall of Fame anyway even if he refuses as an honorary member due to his services and that i learnt from TV and also they said he simply refused to answer when reporters tried to call him only saying he was honoured that his name was doing the rounds but said he only competed cause he wanted to finish his entire journey,which is another publicity stunt by him i guess...

i contacted Mrs. Ketchum today saying if they will be available at home tomorrow at Pallet and she was very happy that i was no more depressed and warmly welcomed me anytime..actually she was heartbroken as well as i couldn't contact her..she really had become like my own mom untill me and Ash broke up...Ash isn't in good terms with her either with all that happened and Ash only returned after 3 years..she was a bit emotional but i understand her plight pretty well..

i've reached Ash's home in Pallet after meeting with Professor Oak and there Tracy was very happy to see me and was optimistic that me and Ash may still have a chance and said that a Caserin and a Luverin will not stay apart for a long time at all for which he got an absolute

hairstylist from both my sisters before i even could talk,my sisters too are worried as theythought if Ash did something to the Gym they would've been held accountable in a conspiracy against me..Tracy left today actually for a tour,returning tomorrow.

Gary,my sisters also were very happy..Professor Oak also,who just told me not to leave atleast without meeting Ash,even if he can't for today..i'm at Ash's home and Mrs. Ketchum was overjoyed to see me,will stay with Lillie tonight...

i haven't met Ash yet as he only returned much late last night..did contact him in his personal phone again and he said he'll meet today afternoon at Professor Oak's lab..didn't say anything else...

(2:30 PM Professor Oak's Lab,Ash's Private Section,only Ash's Pokemons present-

>Torquail,Charizard,Bulbasaur,Ganger,Noivern,Pikachu,Gerninja,Crawdaunt,Feraligator,Heracross,Talonflame,Snorlax,Kingler and rest)

Ash : " Oh! Hellow!Nice to see you here! How was the Lunch?"

Misty : " Fine!Had a good lunch!"

Ash : "How's the Health?"

Misty : "Alright!Good Enough!"

Ash : "Great news!well i'm sorry that i couldn't be here yesterday,suddenly had a few urgencies"

Misty : "It's Alright,I'm on holiday"

Ash : "I see,alright come along,there's a sit and perfect for discussion"

Misty : "Right, Let's Go."

....

Ash : "So i guess you've gone through whatever i told you at least partially.I'm sorry to turn up like that but unless i did,it would've been difficult even now to have an appointment"

Misty : "No i don't mind anymore much.infact you must've heard."

Ash : "Ya certainly have."

Misty : "so i should thank you"

Ash : "well most of all,your friends and family are relieved so it was not an issue."

Misty : "Only that?"

Ash : "Yes,ONLY that"

Misty : "I thought you wanted to hear more"

Ash : "Certainly,but it's not that there's any urgency or rush or.."

Misty : "Necessity"

Ash : "Um..well the only necessity i have is to know as there's no wedding took place recently so only one way

is there to confirm which i want is that whether there's a happy relationship or marriage proposal etc or not,which i must know only now,nothing else"

Misty : "what if i myself confirm you that there is?"

Ash : "already?"

Misty : "what if yes?"

Ash : "well,that is no clarification is it?"

Misty : "why are you so desperate to know whether i've a boyfriend or not?"

Ash : "cause you've had one and the breakup isn't cleared?"

Misty : "i thought that was enough,its not a legal document like a divorce."

Ash : "Quite so,but if there's lack of clarity it's possible that ramifications happen which may not be exactly welcomed later in future"

Misty : "i was clear from my part and i got you clearly then,unless you had given me that note the other day"

Ash : "well i wasn't clear about the clarification you gave nor that i was clarified that you've got mine clarified as i heard of your recent activities and thus my endeavour."

Misty : "and they told you that it's because of you?"

Ash : "because i was promiscuous"

Misty : "did you know who i was?"

Ash : "Perfectly,Cerulean City Gym leader the hardest place in Kanto among water pokemon gyms,may be in the whole world.."

Misty : "enough"

Ash: "Youngest Sensational Sister,incredible beauty,stupendous mwater show performer,ashtonishingly.."

Misty : "that's enough"

Ash : "please be patient,i'm only saying the things why both you and me had a beeline of fans...please bear with me...ashtonishingly good with any kind of water"

pokemons,ever present mermaid-queen of the show who was so georgeous that a phrase young flower dream is still so common and finally and mostly the once ever Gym Leader whoose grace was unmatched,plus the ever heartening.."

Misty(extremely angry) : "Ash! your saying this as you think i melted at these and gave in to whoever courted me?"

Ash : "no neither insinuation nor complimentary are these,i'm stating facts,please hold it,ever heartening generosity,ever present exuberance,all in all such charm,grace,skill and beauty-rather heavenly.Yes, I know who you were. "

Misty : "Did you see anything or heard anything like I did about the womanising playboy from a little town in Kanto that turned heads at everywhere he went with both his charishma and skills?"

Ash : "No"

Misty : "did i pose for the papers half naked to get 100 guys everyday like you did in magazines?"

Ash : "No"

Misty : "that was my point exactly."

Ash : "so i was looking for the wave of women to fall at my feet by posing four times in tea-shirts ?"

Misty : "so i also was dating guys to see as you said,flesh and blood and so on?"

Ash : "or not dating at all."

Misty : "so you know."

Ash : "if i ask you for a date today would you go?"

Misty : "No."

Ash : "and why is that?"

Misty : "you're a stranger."

Ash : "so you date known people then? you.."

Misty(frown) : "what do you mean? i.."

Ash : "would date Cilan if he asked."

Misty(angry,shout) : "You bus.."

Ash : "save that.just give me the answer.what if a friend of your friend asked this on a casual day and he did it as in just a hangout?"

Misty : "he would've said "would you go for a date?"?"

Ash : "that was a custom in Kalos on that special occasion among my friends age groups on that particular city on that day"

Misty : "like people would ask you may we dance?"

Ash : "right,and as it was a date the time passes in Pokemon discussion"

Misty : "so dating and dancing are same to you?"

Ash : "depends on places AND PERSONS"

Misty(tears) : "so i would let anyone jump on me..and you're suggesting your own friends name..(cry) Ash you've stooped so low..."

Ash(scowl) : "don't make a scene let us FINISH if you have the guts"

Misty(extremely angry) : "guts?guts Ketchum? i show you.."

Ash(stopping Misty from hitting him) : "Misty please i of all people surely would know your guts bit by bit,can you listen or does it end like this?No Pokemons aren't solving this cause you must understand that at my level, it's totally useless trying to battle me.."

Misty(very angry, shivering) : "why you b..,if you,if.. "

Ash(laugh) : "Misty,please,this is a field not an ocean.. "

Misty(scream) : "you wanna see my guts?huh?you b..?why...

Ash(solemn) : "Misty,i've worked with Team Rocket you know that,it's useless,calm down.. "

Misty(angry) : "you b..,you can't battle legally and..you..you cheated on that day in the Gym..humiliating me..(tears)..(scream)..YOU B..,if you have guts you b.."

Ash(frown,sigh) : "Misty,if you're too interested,you'll have to surpass all my Pokemons present here at the same time at their highest level and i won't take any responsibilities if don't see your present bunch ever again and here i've got 50..."

Misty(tears almost,returns) : "you f.. b...,you're.. "

Ash : "so a battle isn't good and please don't act like a stupid child. "

Misty(brusting into tears) : "you b.. "

Ash : "Misty,i'm not going to stop till i get an answer"

Misty(scream,tears) : "it's No!we're done!its.. "

Ash : "that's not the answer,is it ? it's just the m.. of a w.. and you should calm down,please Misty,stay in this like a grown up 29 old s.. that you are..."

Misty(scream,tears) : "Ash!..you.. "

Ash : "well i just said your age and.. "

Misty(tears) : "Ash!.." (brusts into tears)

Ash : "um..yeah profess.. "

Misty(crying) : "Ash,you cheated on me alright, don't try to insinuate that i did the same as i had

the chances on anyone including frie..how could you suggest.."

Ash : "well,just a name,don't bother."

Misty(shout,tears) : "and then you'll also suggest...(can't talk as tears).."

Ash(frown) :Tracy yes,[Bulbasaur bind her up snatching away all her pokeballs, and if anyone comes out and does something after first

warning,Snorlax,make sure she doesn't see that

pokemon ever again tell all your friends present

here and my buddies,today either till i have her

with me none would come around Pokemon or

Human,and they know about the other things,if

there's a Human don't kill him but i'm giving you

my word-if a single pokemon today disturbs me

after the first warning,may that Pokemon be no

more among us,or I'll be gone from you all!TELL

THEM! GANGER,GerninjaNoivern,i give you my

word SHE WILL LISTEN TO THESE AND COGNIZE

IT,i don't know what you'll do but i just told you my

wish, Bulbasaur stay alert and if she's not well

make her dizzy but she must listen to each wordand

cognize them, That's what I want,Pikachu,

buddy i tell you today,don't kill any persons but

after that first warning but if any pokemons

misbehaves still, mercilessly kill that brat.if

anyone came here despite my buddy being with

me,pokemon or human,you'll not see me

again,ALL GO!]

Misty(tears,scream) : "Ash!..you've become.."

Ash(scowl) : "a monster,yes.(Misty brusts into tears)..But Misty,you've seen what i did,if i want to battle you,i'll give your Pokeballs or else i wont till we finish and if they or any other misbehave here beyond first warning,my buddies will simply kill that brat,I've become a demon today and you'll see every bit of it if you have your so called GUTS and i wouldn't have done this had you at the first sound of your secret 15 year long beau's name..well only one in the millions..

Misty (crying,scream) : "Ash! you're.."

Ash : "..had not given up fighting on the first sound..you'll be safe as i've got my arrangements ready, don't worry,and so would your illegally swollen.."

Misty(screams tries to hit Ash again,Ash orders Bulbasaur to stop her which he oblidges) : "why you coward..i can..i.."

Ash(frown) : "your not a 12 old Misty,act unless you're a b.. since then.."(Misty totally breaks down in tears)

Ash : "so as i was saying,your pokemons are safe unless you agitate them if they come out,so just stay calm! you'll listen whatever i'll tell you today till end with a sane body and mind and will cognize every bit of it, only then i'll leave you,you know who i'm today-no power in this world will be able to stop me from telling you all that i have to,and i've truely become a demon today, nobody will be able to stop me no matter what they did from telling you everything that i have to and you perfectly cognizing every bit of it,if you can't bear is just say "ASH!I QUIT!",3 times thumping the

ground, and i'll let you go instantly and you'll not see me ever again. now, LISTEN!

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash, Trac..(can't talk anymore)

Ash(frown, shout) : "YES, all those brats when they were single Tracy, Brock, Gary

Oak, Cilan, Kane, Brauch, Trevor, Lenny, Price, Harris...every single brat

that were ever our mutual friends when they were single! each!...(lower voice)..yeah, definitely you could've dated them or even more, even more.. "

Misty(tears, looks at Ash with disdain, screams her head off) : "ASH! you've just abducted me and now(bursts into tears)..now, now you're...you know what your saying Ash? you've..(totally breaks down)..Ash!...(cries uncontrollably)

Ash : "yes i've abducted you to cure you off from my memories that's all I promised Lance i'll and i'll ,no f.. b.. can stop me today including Lance, a h.. s.. like you who can't forget me needs this, AND CAN TAKE THIS, no matter how many times they get f.. per hour... FIGHT! and no, no line has been crossed stay calm "

Misty(tears, extremely angry) : "calm? huh! calm? so you were also bedding M..no i can't stoop as low as you have you p..(cries out loud) "

Ash : "Upto Serena, yes i get you "

Misty(crying) : "Ash, all these years.. "

Ash : "um..yeah, but at least you shall know that with you i didn't do... "

Misty(crying, scream) : "Ash..! "

Ash : "well, i'm giving you an example, Green isn't

my friend so i couldn't mention him as mutual "

Misty(crying) : "Gre...What are you sug.. "

Ash : "nothing,would you calm down?"

Misty(crying,shivering) : "i've wasted my life with you...let me go,Ash!please!(brusts into tears) "

Ash : "Until you answer,my answer is NO,and i'll say what i know about you in exact language.. "

Misty(crying,scream) : "Ash!..just.. "

Ash(frown) : "and well you still can quit like a f.. s.. like that day but your wasn't satisfied may be for a few days so you were h.. enough to even come here to begin with so... "

*Misty(crying uncontrollably,sits down on grass) :
"Ash,you're... "*

Ash : "alright being polite,please Misty stay on this,or are you just going to budge just because i'm swearing you?"

Misty(crying) : "Ash..what do you.. "

Ash : "look both you and me can swear each other for eternity but no answer will come out,and i'll have to be very dissapointed that a Hall of Fame Gym leader at 29 can't talk with someone just because he's swearing,or have you just given up on yourself?"

Misty(crying,screams) : "YES! I HAVE,I HAVE given up,just let me...(crying uncontrollably) "

Ash(smile) : "well then i may kill you right now if you write it down(hands over pen and paper),cause then i'm sure you won't have a problem with it would you?...Listen!..if you quit now,i'll let you go but your Gym and any b.. that

you've b... with,will not survive my wrath!LISTEN!.."

Misty(crying, sobbing) : "Ash,just..just..let me go(crying) "

Ash : "only if you allow me to end this conversation you can go to whichever s.. you want but are you not good enough anymore to withstand a little bit of gust fearing the big winds would f.. you up like none of your.. "

Misty(crying, scream) : "Ash, please (sobbing) just don't.. "

Ash(frown) : "i see your too chaste,fair enough,anyhow would you continue if i swear a bit less? "

Misty(sobbing) : "..leave me Ash..please.. "

Ash(scream) : "so,Misty Waterflower is NO MORE then ain't it?RIP,that should be used then?all your pokemons here and in the gym will die immediately and today then,cause a b.. like you're giving up on them cause.. "

Misty(uncontrollably sobbing) : "say.. "

Ash : "yeah that what's is expected here atleast from you of all people!we were talking about dance vs date and cheating, what's your opinion on cheating? "

Misty(sobbs unctrolablly, sometimes later) :

"Ash,you've cheat.. "

Ash : "so i cheated?all right stay with me.In Kalos i wasn't cheating cause we broke up,in Unova i wasn't dating cause we were still there,in Sinnoh no news came around and you know extremely well my travel companions from there,in Battle Frontier i wasn't a star which you were and then

again you know what i was doing there very well,in Hoenn i was none and there too you know,but Elite4,well consider i've just been back after tens and thousands of affairs and s... f.. and Unova was party's or hangouts where if you want day to day analysis you can ask your ardent f.. Cilan..."

Misty(bursts into tears) : "Ash,please..."

Ash(Frown,scoff) : "you know very well b.. that i can't give you day to day report after 5/6 years unless we can do time travel,just GROW UP!"

Misty(sobbing, sometimes later) : "Ash!you cheated fully knowing you've someone already waiting for you to just ask her..".(cries uncontrollably)"

Ash(frown) : "That's the first thing i told them without naming that i have a girlfriend whoose very devoted to me and i didn't name you cause to me you were not a w.. that i would sell you around wherever i went,that's exactly why i didn't name you.Now do you want a prove that i'm not lying that i never told that i've a girlfriend?then you know very well this would go on for eternity...i'm giving you a piece- BEAR IT like a Gym Leader!..if i have never f.. you no matter how much you wanted me to and you being who you were then and i was absolutely no one,i wouldn't be stupid enough just overnight to f.. around s.. leaving you,who you were then and you were only too willing to give in and you know more than anyone else what you and i ever wanted and we had each other for 13 damn years to enjoy anytime,if i f.. you constantly

for 7 days you would've only been too happy to continue till eternity...and you know i never even wanted to kiss you after one occasion,and yes on that one occasion i became a h.. b.. like i'm now and breached your trust despite you being an eternal s..."

Misty(uncontrollably cries) : "Ash,that..."

Ash(laugh) : "was a good practice wasn't it?"

(Misty breaks down completely)Listen! don't tell me now because i liked you,i was only there for your body or your generosity,we knew each other since 12,you and me grew up together,we knew what we had to know,we were traveling around for 5 years and for that 5 years not one night passed when we weren't together,if we wanted we would've satisfied ourselves to maximum during Jhoto,and yes i was attracted to you,infatuated with you as were you,i did gaze at you but i did never stare like a h.. b.. at your b.

. or h

. or b.. or l.. or v.. any time ever in all the time in 13 years ever.(laugh)..well may be your photoes then i guess(brusts into laughter)..

(shout)..LISTEN!.." (Pokemons keep Misty from fainting)

Misty(some moments later) : "Ash,just let..."

Ash(frown) : "Misty,please,you're way stronger than this and this is nothing to you just Listen!no matter what i'm now you know extremely well neither you nor me have any secrets regarding this matter to each other.Misty,i've seen you from a

little teenager to now you're 29 years old and also at 25,when you were an international star,we never needed to hide from each other these things as you know it as a fact that these weren't our premise for our relationship ever to begin with,don't blindfold yourself now saying why didn't we f..

around so hard as to never again needing anyone.I've had THE most beautiful and skillful girl in anything she ever did,everyday in front of me at my mercy who was devoted to me so blindly forever,and i didn't f.. her all around cause she was Misty,Misty wasn't a b.. to me.Don't start this..SHUT UP!..

Misty(scream,crying) : "Ash,your're..your.."

Ash(frown) : "Misty,please!no matter what you become few people will ever know you bit by bit like i know both physically and mentally,may be none ever will...and you know me like that as well.."

Misty(cries,scream) : "I DID... you've just..(again breaks down).."

Ash(frown) : "Misty,please if we start this it'll take eternity but i must finish it before that..."

Misty(screams, crying) : "my frien..(again breaks down)

Ash(frown) : "all your beaus together can't do a fig to me and you know that,and also know that at this very moment the whole Hall of Fame combined with all legendaries can't do a fig to me,so no battling or f.. boy scouts will get a s.. like

*you out of this,you have to do it on your own,
unless you've been f.. around for 29 years..."*

*Misty(shivering, sobbing, whispering) : "Ash,i was
your frie..."*

*Ash(laugh) : "more like a friendly b.. but now would you
listen or you're just giving up because the stool
and urine..."*

Misty(sobbing uncontrollably) : "Ash,just let me..."

*Ash(frown) : "right,Stay in this unless you're giving
up on everything and everyone?Stay!yes may be
you think i needed to f.. someone around everyday
as i grew up and you were always away but i've
had my chances and many people would've given
their two arms and still do just to have a full view
of you and still i not even once wanted your body
or your generosity.Now i can go about it all the time
Now,may we go to the next part?"*

*Misty(sobbing uncontrollably) : "...but..but..you
won't tell me ever with whom you were going out..
(crying out loud)"*

*Ash(frown) : "No as i wasn't bedding them and i
never tried to remember any b.. i met in a f.. party
and you know what i'm talking about,you weren't a
little girl then but an internationally well known
star,we had grown up enough by then to know that
we can't share our under.. as we were 25 and not
12 anymore and you know what i'm talking about"*

*Misty(sobbing) : "and it was infact me who was
sharing her u.. behind your back cause i was an
international star?..Ash,you..(uncontrollably cries)"*

Ash : "exactly My point."

Misty(crying,shout) : "ASH.."

Ash : "we're not doing a drama ok?"

Misty(absolutely breaks down) : "you thought i was.."

Ash : "bedding,yes.but would you allow me to finish?"

Misty(crying uncontrollably) : "I beg of you.."

Ash(shakes Misty up) : "Misty,LISTEN we're only getting started.and i know you're not a coward to budge so easily,you don't need to beg for anything to a b.. like me EVER,LISTEN!(lets Misty go)I am saying who were you bedding?was it someone else you were bedding or WAS IT ME?"

Misty(sobbing,bit surprized) : "what?"

Ash : "did you bed me or did you bed someone else while i was away?"

Misty(tries to clear off tears,sobbing) : "Ash,what are you trying to mean?"

Ash : "i'm saying i only ever saw the futility and the fun no matter from pokemon perspective how great the date was..."

Misty : "and I didn't rather i was bedding a new bloke..(again cries)"

Ash : "You know what Misty,yes i accuse you,you were all over the bed"

Misty(crying) : "that's it then isn't it? i.."

Ash : "going back to depression again?"

Misty(breaks down) : "i can't take it anymore.."

Ash(as loudly as possible in Misty's ears while vigorously shaking her) : "YOU WERE BEDDING ME".

Misty(sobbing,surprized) : "what?"

Ash : "exactly what you heard,i accuse you that you were cheating on me as you were bedding me"

Misty(tries to clear off her tears, sobbing) :

"Ash,stop this nonsense.."

Ash : "Misty,You can't forget me even when you're married to someone else"

Misty(a bit angry, sobbs) : "is that a challenge Ketchum?"

Ash : "hence great guys like Georgio,Green and Rudy never had a chance despite being as good as anyone and you know it,infact you wouldn't have been in this mess had you been with any one of them,and 4 years no contact is a long long time.that's what i'm saying"

Misty(sobbing) : "who told.."

Ash : "they themselves as soon as i gave my real identity to them and they had to give me only truth given who i'm.the whole Elite4 would do anything for me without a single question.."

Misty(sobbing) : "it was.."

Ash : "LISTEN! i know how you behaved with them only too well and you were the ever chaste lady as ever,i know each time you cancelled the very first date.those f.. themselves had to tell me or my sources and i confirmed them from your diaries that i took from your room and others were supplied by your helpers whom i scared via Elite 4 Kanto,you met those guys as those b.. encirculated you all the time..,then we

broke up,then you agreed to go to date cause you just didn't see any light anywhere as soon as i was gone but only to

cancel the very first date saying you can't and you're sorry,etc,etc and they realized you can't forget someone,(laugh)besides about a million people in Cerulian only would give all their limbs to f.. you won't they?"

Misty(screem, crying) : "stop insulating me,i'm not a s.."

Ash : "i know about your chastity more than you don't bother"

Misty(screams, sobbs unctrolablly) : "Ash,your..your.."

Ash(laugh) : "exactly that i've f.. so many i know only too well that who and how they f.. you"

Misty(screams,anger,sobbing) : "Ash,i'll.."

(Dark Gang stops her from talking)

Ash(frown) : "Tracy can f.. you all he wants,like he did before and was doing for years but you lost him to your own sister..(laugh)..such pity..anyhow(frown)but would you accept Tracy as you beau?"

Misty(totally breaks down) : "Ash,I Quit!I Quit!I Quit!"

Ash(laugh) : "that was just wordplay,untill you lose every bit of your prized chastity...(Misty almost faints but the Pokemons keep her

up)...what(laugh)? that you can't be f.. around and be chaste...?..i right now am destroying every bit of it(laugh)..am i even touching you Misty(laugh)?..."

Misty(sobbing vigorously) : "Ash,please..."

Ash(scream) : "shut up b...! you're body gets f.. or mind or you're verbally f.. no matter how you get f.. if you've known what chastity is truly you'll be that forever if you so wish!**SHUT UP!**

Misty(lies down on grass, sobbing whispering) : "just kill me Ash,just.."

Ash(laugh) : "not till you're chaste(laughes uncontrollably)"

Misty(sobbing,whisper) : "what do you want Ash?..what(cries uncontrollably).."

Ash(goes close to Misty's ears) : "I WANT YOUR CHASTITY!"

Misty(screams, sobbing) : "then just f...(brusts into tears)"

Ash(scowl) : "say i f.. you now,can i get rid of your chastity?or if i f.. you now mentally by just gazing at youe v.. d.. all over but neither imagining nor touching,would i be chaste,say your body is paralyzed and i f.. you,would you be chaste,if your mind doesn't budge a bit?if you mentally c.. on my g.. would you be chaste,even if your body is paralyzed..you're body is paralyzed your mind still works,your mind is f.. me your body is 6 feet away from me...if you can show where's your chastity at all you'll be taken further."

Misty(lying,sobbs uncontrollably) : "please Ash just stop that..."

Ash(laugh) : "Chastity ain't it? chastity,Misty you've lost it the first day you saw me if you weren't a professional s.. even then(brusts into laughter)..."

Misty(sobbing, scream) : "Yes,i was an in-born

s..i'm..i'm.. " (breaks down crying)

Ash(laugh) : "so your chastity vanished then ain't it?" (brusts into laughter)..but you must say it in words...(brusts into laughter)..."

*Misty(almost motionless, sobbing,whishper) :
"Ash,the day i saw you first.."*

Ash(laugh) : "i got unchaste(brusts into laughter)..no till you word it down i won't budge..."

Misty(angry, sobbs,crying) : "no i won't say that, (scream)do whatever you want!..you b..(again brusts into tears).."

Ash(frown) : "what are you holding onto now?i always say i f.. around and i don't hold onto that,does it mean you're more chaste than me when i showed you that you in your mind has bedded only me several times,what to speak of others..."

Misty(sobbing, scream) : "i'm unchaste then,i'm a wh..(brusts into tears)..

Ash(frown) : "you yourself can make you that, nobody else,may we go to the next step?"

Misty(sobbing) : "you b..(brusts into tears)"

Ash(frown) : "i'm saying that you d.. among millions to forget your Ash only which you couldn't."

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash.."

Ash : "see this could be fun if we both were promiscuous you know why as i said if we cheat on each other or anyone else we'll be only thinking about each other only.same way if you're married happily infact it won't be exactly nice and easy

now nor for me,because there's another and the comparison and eventual adjustments would go on for ages possiby never completing so the children won't be exactly nice in such a situation i guess.. "

Misty(crying) : "what do you want,Ash?are you cursing me that even if i do marry someone else my children..(chokes totally with tears) "

Ash(scream) : "you had 4 damn years to forget me,4 DAMN YEARS.. "

Misty(sobbing) : "i'll take 40,but(trying to stand up again) i've..i've...i've decided,Ash Ketchum we're done.i'll show you that.. "

Ash(laugh) : "Your marrying someone to show someone something? "

Misty(crying and again sitting down,totally broken down) : "Ash let me go.. "

Ash(frown) : "Misty,is there any point in getting into a relationship only because you want to forget someone else? "

Misty(sobbing) : "i couldn't.. "

Ash : " exactly,neither could I"

Misty(shouting loudly) : "i want to forget you Ash but.. "

Ash(solemn) : "you can't,neither can i Misty,neither can I"

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash if you were a girl.. "

Ash(solemn) : "well all i can say is that same for me, I won't be doing the right thing either if i tried to marry a woman only to forget another.there's a saying that you have to say goodbye but that means a Pokemon goes to another,not so easy for

humans, especially if they're a chaste wh.. like you."

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash..you..your torturing me since 12,give me a break please,go away Ash,i was.."

Ash : "so happy before meeting you today here as i read your note and came running to my ASH to be f.. around all my life!HAPPILY!"

Misty(crying, sobbing uncontrollably) : "Ash you don't expect me to run back to you after whatever you can say or do,none has ever humiliated and mentally tortured me like you've done...you've insulted my..(breaks down completely)"

Ash(laugh) : "Chastity?(laughs uncontrollably)"

Misty(sob,scream) : "Ash,i'm..(breaks down totally)"

Ash(scream) : "a girl so no boy can have chastity?"

Misty(uncontrollably sobs) : "just kill...(sobbs unctrolablly)"

Ash(frown) : "your chastity,then i'm doing it listen!i atleast said i didn't impure it and i atleast said that except for me none had the chance unless YOU YOURSELF had budged and lying to me just like i'm not..i'm telling you that i've f... people around for so long..i've.. your problem with that isn't mine neither is your chastity,all i said is that i didn't c... inside your v.. to begin with and viseversa,i atleast didn't start with you..and about the expectation of running back to be f.. around,not at all,i expected you to may be jump around me,scream.."

Misty(sobbing uncontrollably) : "Ash.."

Ash : "you see Misty,you aren't forgetting me in

this life whether you're the most chaste or the biggest wh.. and nor i'm forgetting you during my lifespan no matter how many i f.. around everyday or dont at all, and that's what i meant,i don't give a fig about any random person,i made a mistake continuing to journey rather than being beside you then when you truely needed my arm around your shoulder and i despite having that power to lend you that support never cared rather went for utter selfishness,and i'm killing myself for that since i realized it cause more than a s.. to me you were my very close friend and i didn't care about you that's why and i'm sorry for that and have been for a long time.if there's a chance i would like to set it straight. "

Misty(sobbing) : "you.. "

Ash : "did i ever kiss your head off feeling your body all over since that first occasion that too went as politely as possible and only after asking but i would apologize if you didn't want it that day and i like a h.. b.. jumped on you cheating on our friendship,but still barring that one mement in 13 years,never did i li.. your tounge never did i snaggle you that day or have i su.. the j.. out of you everytime i ever saw you,did i li.. your v.. all the time for 13 years for kisses Misty,huh?!?did I?"

Misty(sobbing uncontrollably) : "Ash,please.. "

Ash : "SHUT UP,unless the Misty that could tame a f.. lunatic Gyarados singlehandedly at 17 has become such a f.. up wh.. now that can't stand a verbal onslaught!STAND UP!LISTEN!did i demand

that we share a bed all the time everyday that you had m..?huh?! you want to know whether i f.. around girls before i broke up don't you,but you of all were closest to me all the time and just a giggle away from too happily sharing your under...all the time-but was i only looking to f.. you every night you were sleeping near me cause you had some problems?have i ever been friendly to you only because you were infatuated with me and i just kept licking my lips waiting to jump and prey upon you just in that right moment? did i ever f.. you like anything in all those places that we've been in 13 years and no don't get me started,i never showed doesn't mean i never knew exactly what you wanted from me since the beginning..Misty,you were the Sensational Sister the youngest and most sought after all over the world they died for you all over and i kept seeing that day after day brushing it aside cause to me you were ever my little friend Misty,and to me you were exactly that all the time,and at the top of your fame as a Gym Leader and Perfomer,only I had you at my mercy Misty,only me in the whole world..the girl who if looked at them they would feel their thousand lives has been f.. enough was at my mercy,i was unique even then,all i wanted to say what?- 'can I f.. you tonight Mist,please please you look so so s.. today?' did I?ever?Misty,i've seen many chosen s.. in my godforsaken life and their antics,and YOU if only YOU weren't one of them,never have been atleast till i left you and this

atleast i could say of my friend who still,still have
an infatuation for me since the very first day for all these
17 damn years no matter what that
despite having truely great guys at her mercy my
girlfriend waited for me cause she cherished me
despite me never being kind to her,this i can say
about you to anyone who dares to say otherwise ever...but
Misty,i could've f.. you all around and
left,and yes i did leave but before that despite
having all the luck and chances,did I ever ever
even asked you out to go to shopping,to date,to
skywatch,to a beach,a lake,a desart,a restaurant,a
movie apart from how a friend would ask you for a
hangout?..did i hangout with you all those occasions
because i just wanted to f.. you around?..was i..”
Misty(screams,crying) : "Ash,please stop."
Ash : "that kiss that i had with you,which you may
blame me now that actually what i meant that day
was that i wanted to s.. you all day.. but i know i
didn't and that was my first as well as last when
we were physical,the second one was an accident
which i was foolish enough to not predict,and I
never expected Serena of all people to do that out
of blue,and that's the real s.. i've seen from closest
quarter-hanging around me to be s.. every day and
night like a copybook h.. b.. and i ever took her
under my wing cause of her parents were too well
known to Professor Oak of all and even to my mom
remotely.. and she was a r..s..
before that so i thought if i could do

something,Kalos being my very last regional journey and i had 5 leagues-but to my harsh awakening i found you can't take a w.. as your sister no matter how may you try and the b.. did shine in all her glorious s.. to pull off a stunt on me.anyhow thats a different story,you see I didn't do all those even with you then and the only time we did,it was only a moment too emotional for both of us,or maybe i was a h.. b.. that day,but i hugged you many times and that was it for me but as far as i know,i didn't fel.. "

Misty(sobbing uncontrollably) : "Ash,please..stop..let me speak..all

you're trying so hard to tell me is that you've been kissed only 3 times,and only once did you intentionally do it and expect me to believe you given simply what you've said earlier just now?"

Ash : "no i must be clear to you,did i ever by any means improperly behaved with you,you of all girls?"

Misty(sobbing) : "and neither then would you do so to.. "

Ash(Sternly) : "cause I don't want to Misty,i don't have to nor do i need to.you also can realize publicity stunts very well and Serena was i thought only being childish and i didn't tell her about you cause you weren't with me then and it would've encouraged the s.. that she is even more and which anyhow did,giving me the lesson once a w..,always a w.. "

Misty(sobbing) : "so your inaction didn't help you

then?"

Ash : "well,i tell you then frankly my views as i did in that note.

I DONT KISS URINE and STOOL"

Misty(crying) : "so i'm also.."

Ash : "the only exception.To me you're not just this body or these emotions that you're showing now,you're far far beyond,i wish i knew it perfectly before but sadly i didn't.i have had chances to be all over a thousand girls including you and i could've jumped upon you just about anytime and apart from you i still have had enough s.. recently even more..,but the thing is that except you there's pus and urine and in case of you i don't have to be all over you at all nor have i ever seen you or will in the same light as i have and will in case of all others which includes.."

Misty : "Ash,your're insulting the whole.."

Ash : "did you kiss Ash Ketchum or the saliva,spit,cough.."

Misty(crying) : "Please.."

Ash : "if you've kissed Ash Ketchum you can be happy about it as am I,unless you realize this i must go further with this"

Misty(sobbing) : "what are you trying to.."

Ash : "the others have touched,fondled,kissed,liked,became friends with,is greatfull to was kind to,so on so on..all that's not Ash Ketchum.Only my Mom,my Pokemons and YOU,MISTY WATERFLOWER,has ever got the Ash Ketchum that i'm"

Misty(with tears) : "Ash you want me to bel.."

Ash : "fine,then did you fish out a mass of flesh and urine that fine afternoon in a godforsaken forest lake or did you..No don't interrupt,i'm going to the bottom of this only then i myself will never show my face to you.BE PATIENT.you got me out of there,probably saving both my and Pikachu's life,then i borrowed you bi-cycle and the rest you know.What made you fall for me?"

Misty(with tears) : " you tendered Pikachu,you.."

Ash : "it's not a question of what i did,you've seen everyone and me...same stool and urine,but the rest were not whereas I was,why?you couldn't help it,right?"

Misty(screams out,sobbing fanatically) : "No,and i wish i could..i.."

Ash(shaking Misty) : "please Misty,be patient we're only beginning..your answers,generosity,kindness,warmth or the look the skills..i've had enough with these nonsense my entire life.if you can honestly say you liked me because of something i will instantly give up on you"

Misty(crying,scream) : "what do you want me to confess,Ash? i just liked you I don't know why,i couldn't help.."

Ash : "right stay with me on this.Other people have liked me for a reason,except My Mom and My Pokemons..i like my mom because of nothing,i like my pokemons because of nothing,my pokemons may've been charmed with my care but

i've released Butterfree some 16 years ago,why does his children's i don't know who they are even,mine passed away ages ago..why they keep coming back?why all of my pokemons don't leave me despite me leaving them at places? Pikachu never was cared because of his temperament,i did care but he refused to go into a Pokeball,Bulbasaur refused to leave or evolve,Haunter came to me on his own will,and many more.i've given them full license,when i trained them it was more then most and then later all fun than training and you know all of these.they've stayed with me because they like Ash Ketchum not my blah,blah,blah,something.After Sinnoh i singled out each and sternly told them they can leave after they choked in the final leaving Pikachu all alone even after I won,they didn't,i've been out to catch them battle them do whatever i want to do with them,they kept liking me.they didn't have to,why? they don't know.are you listening?"

Misty(dizzy) : "yes.."

Ash(shaking her) : "Stay on this,we're exactly here and look around you,Ganger,Noivern,Gerninja,my own dark type pokemons,they can't breed due to their heightened powers,i never forced them,they chose it themselves-for me,what assurance i gave them that I won't drain them later breaking my promise,you know very well that this evolution is possible if only they will and not just any dark pokemon can reach this stage,very selected can

and they themselves have to comply only then this happens,why,why have they done this despite me rather dissuading them consistently? i wanted to recall them,i've been afraid of losing,i wanted to surrender,i wanted them to save themselves not go too far,THEY REFUSED.i wanted them to have their lives,THEY REFUSED,you know after Sinnoh i tortured Bulbasaur of all,He Refused to leave me,after Team Rocket,i abandoned Snorlax in a place,from where for his type,none can return to the Lab alive,he returned for me,i drove Charizard away,he Refused to be left..hell,after Sinnoh Elite4 i did the biggest thing,I left Pikachu after draining some of his energy,he refused to leave me,and miraculously got back to full strength as soon as i accepted him back and i've tested it on all except my mom,whom i don't have to test unless i'm a b.. and i can go on and on about it, and why i kept winning from any situation as i didn't ever tell my pokemons that battling was more important even in my dreams? they've given their lives to me-why?"

Misty(tears,bit sobbing) : "Ash its your.."

Ash(laugh) : "what s..?what?..Ganger she doesn't talk listens,cognizes every word,when i feel like she's off..what is it Misty,huh?!?what are you trying to get at?...your.your.your.your..sounds exactly what you are and you are a wh..,Misty is a wh.. SHUT THE

F.. UP!..your!..but wait (laugh)..i know it...your..well lets see why Misty s.. became infatuated with a h..

b.. like Ash from the very beginning(laugh)..here it is..my look,my skill,your gratitude,my gratitude,your infatuation,your dream,your crush,my money,my body,my fame,my kindness,my warmth,my gallantry,my generosity,my friendship,my closure,my help,my affection, my benevolence,my passion,my heart,my smile,my intelligence,my achievements,my compassion,my social skills,my social services,my valour,my vigour,my honesty,my success,my goodness,my truthfulness,my plight,my distress,my position,my condition,my troubles,my profession(bursts into laughter)- oh!My Mind/was I kind/why rewind/(scream)I'm not BLIND...Ganger off..

(few Minutes Later)Misty(sobbing, lying down on grass,looking at

Ash) : "um..Ash..come.."

Ash(frown) : "what?lie down on top of you and f.. you the few more moments you've left in your f.. life of a f.. s..?"

Misty(tries to scream) : "your soul.."

(chokes)..almost faints,pokemons cure her)..

Ash(frown) : "what is a soul?"

Misty(sobbs uncontrollably) : "Ash please it your self..it's just you..."

Ash(scream) : "RIGHT!IT'S ME,NOT MINE.why my mom loves me?even if i kick her out of home tomorrow without giving her any means she'll deep down still want only to reconcile not to destroy me.why?why is it that people like me who

didn't have to?

Misty(sobbing, uncontrollably,sitting up,tears) :

"Ash,i.. "

Ash(extremely agitated) : "such charm i've on you ain't it doll?that now you're thinking your Ash is FINALLY back to you again to unchaste you,then LISTEN i'm doing all these to rob whatever you'veleft now,yeah that's what my real intension is- lets battle doll,shall we?...YOU'LL HAVE TO LISTEN if you want to die peacefully,GET UP!..you 3 brats make her stand up..yes..lets battle s..

empress,lets battle(laugh,Misty sobbs uncontrollably)..i cheated on you with just about any w.. you can imagine,and while i was enjoying their ...,i laughed at your loyalty and then i'd cheat on that w.. with another s.. and so on and i'll do it again and again and again on everyone,i'll do this to every single person including you all my life i'll become the devil that'll leave a mark on people for a long time..i'll deceive you with the mask of..MISTY(vigorously shaking her),LISTEN..no you can't still faint..(laugh).. longing to be f.. around since the very first sight ain't it?(brusts into laughter,Misty totally breaks down in tears,wants to drink water,Gerninja provides it..a few moments later)

(solemn,sits Misty down,who lies down again, uncontrollably crying)..i forgot sometimes peoplehelped me and all that just having a look-a this boy is sweet it seemed to this...sweet,warm,kind... (scream)F.. all of that, there's a f.. reason behind

all f.. that i received.. "

Misty(sobbing,mild exhausted voice) : "Ash..i.. "

Ash(frown) : "you don't know what that X factor was? "

Misty(sobbing uncontrollably) : "Ash,did i.. "

Ash(solemn) : "no it's not a matter of fault or blame,all i'm saying is that you were there and felt what you felt but didn't know why..i certainly wasn't the prettiest h.. b.. at 12 and i know that.. "

Misty(trying to sit on the bench beside Ash) :

"Ash,please, let's.. "

Ash(angry,Makes Misty sit on the grass) : "Shut the f.. up!just two words and a professional s.. that you are coming all over for her only Ash!Stay where you are!..

Misty(uncontrollably crying) : "Ash..i'm..i'm sorry...sorry..i didn't...(brusts into tears) "

Ash(laugh) : "want to break up with you but i gotso h.. that just before i got f.. by Green,so i had to cause i thought i might get(brusts into laughter).. what's that damned word..(brusts into laughter)s..?(brusts into laughter).. "

Misty(again almost fainted but pokemons keep her up,5 minutes later, sobbing uncontrollably) :

"Ash...just.. "

Ash(brusts into laughter) : "you all,she doesn't talk only cogitate..Oh!i get you now s..,that day you were so h.. you forgot to put up your sweet greeny ... so when your beau greeny came in, obviously without the Misty stuffs as he was with his Misty(brusts into laughter),Misty s.. and Ah!the

day!Ah!the joy..so you both f.. hard without p.. thus you were sure you'll get .. which you did but before that you cut me off then he went away and now has taken away his k.. so you're depressed that your k.. aren't with you(brusts into laughter)..or is it that you like that day have had too many a... that means in battle -surrender?(laughs uncontrollably).you all off.. "

Misty(lies down,sobbing uncontrollably,few minutes later) : "this was all wasn't it Ash for my..my..(brusts into tears)"

Ash(frown) : "I know only too well you were not the one who invited that f.. there that day,and i didn't know him then..so don't worry about that b.. "

Misty(shivering and sobbing uncontrollably) : "i was just.. "

Ash(frown) : "your Ash was cheating on you and that just killed you..you know what Misty,i tell you something,you were cheering me up all the time since the 1st day,so may be you were there because i was good at battling or you thought i was so why don't i charm you with what i've got now so that you can't help but to un.. yourself right now..see my exact power now..(release Gyarados).. "

Misty(sits up,shivering) : "Gyar.. "

Ash(grin) : "Right,you own sweety,12 years ago saw your soul..that is(laugh)..anyhow,now try to turn her on against me and

Bulbasaur..Bulbasaur(Bulbasaur comes)..come here..you three brats, Bulbasaur's busy..make her

stand up till my wish,you know the rest..(Gyarados looks at Misty,all flustered)..

(laugh)..Misty,Misty,Misty!..such a sweet name for such a sweet chaste s..,you know whats happening,i'm faking myself and telling Bulbasaur to connect me to Gyarados as much as he can and tell him this is all because i cherish your Master and she's not listening..your own Gyarados,taming whom you realized who you are and you became the best Water Pokemon master once ever,that Gyarados doesn't know who is who and you can do nothing about it ever chaste b...WHY cause you STILL think your ASH will come back to You..look at yourself(smirk,laugh)..and(scream) LOOK AT MY POWER.. "

Misty(sits down on the Grass,Ash returns all her pokeballs and recalls Gyarados after patting her head gently,and tells Bulbasaur to return to take care for Misty)..

Ash(grin) : "see Misty s..,what Ash Ketchum means..No,you can't faint just yet unless you're too drained out of your j... by all that that have had their chances..i've only begun..i've cheated on everyone with this,this mask of civility,honesty,i'm enjoying your current plight and i know you still can't forget me and will come running back to be s.. around all over the first moment i want you to..and i'll torture you like this for the rest of your life,you'll feel the pain of my separation when your're with your kids,husband,

grandchildren,when you're first baby arrives,you'll still think about me as the father,when you'll be ... with anybody including your husband,all you'll think is only me..you'll run back to me from beyond death,Misty,if i wanted you to..i'll accuse you of infidelity with the very dearest friends,you'll still have only praise for me,i'll defame you,i'll throw you to the masses that want your ...everyday and you still will like me...Misty,you'll think of leaving your own children for my sake if i so wanted,you'll think of leaving your beloved husband for my sake if i so wanted and though duty then would bind you,your heart will be at MY feet not to them..Misty,this little chaste life of yours has been doomed when you decided to not leave me that day 17 years back..and i'm so much loving the every bit of your suffering,plight,death,you are a Hall of Fame Gym Leader,but now you've been drained of the last bit of life you had left in you before you came here today...Misty,in reality with all that you've had and will have,your no more than a roads.. s.. performing to the claps of her f... all the while she dreams of someone else ... her,that's exactly who you will be even more after you walk out from here unless you die right now,which is again what you won't or even if you do your very last thought would be me, beyond that too i'll be there f.. you,cause STILL its your ASH isn't it,dieMisty,die,i'm killing you,I,Your Ash,take your time today nobody will come here today to save you or

disturb me cause this area is all mine,i've a share here in the Lab that they themselvs have given me as honour and i can do whatever i want to do here,and i need no physical force to kill a s.. up s.. you totally devoid of any s.. or life to begin with..die Misty,die slowly,let me enjoy your slow,tedious approach to the eventual,all the while you STILL try to remember the moment you first saw me to console yourself and forgive me and return to me from beyond death-STILL...But This,This is Exactly who i'm in reality. "

(30 minutes later)

Misty(lying down on the grass,now looking at the Sky,tearfull eyes,sobbing) : " ..Ash.. "

Ash(grin) : "want more s.. s.. ?"

Misty(sobbing,sitting up) : "Ash..can.. "

Ash(frown) : "yes,you can ask and take your time"

Misty(a bit later,sobbing still) : "Ash..i'll come back to you..(Ash Grins)..(very agitated)..No,Listen..i'll still come back to you no matter what you do to me..(cries again)..Ash...i want to..(tries to stand up) "

Ash(frown,makes Misty sit again on the grass) : "get f.. by me?relax,all in good times,(laugh)how lucky am I to have such a devoted b.. "

Misty(cries and screams) : "Ash.. Shut up..i want.. "

Ash(frown) : "fine take your time go on"

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash..i'll return to you..i just...i...i just i've to...i..i can't.. "

Ash(frown) : "help but to be f.. around by me?..no you have just had enough s.. "

Misty(scream and falls down) : "Ash,i'll.. "

Ash(solemn) : "die to come back and be f.. around again?(Misty uncontrollably cries)...what(laugh)..juat once Ash,just once..i've been f.. by so many but you,please Ash..just f.. me once..please(brusts into laughter)..."

Misty(few moments later,sobbing) : "yeah,exactly.. (tries to undr..) "

Ash(frown) : "Bulbasaur tie her up(Bulbasaur tiesMisty up completely)...just everything is blank to you unless there's your Ash..so see Misty s...that's what i'm saying,my pokemons were bound to me,my mom was bound to me..they know me,its not something,its me,my soul that has done something to them..they can't leave me no matter what..soul,that my heart and mind combined is a mere reflection of..and unfortunately a s.. named MISTY WATERFLOWER is bound to me...except for you nobody has,is or going to see my soul(laugh) that i want to f.. around with anybody...(brusts into laughter) "

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash.. "

Ash(solemn) : "you see the rest is sludge,garbage,body,emotions, generosity and so on..pus,cough,urine,spit-i know friends i know people i have a bond with them its mental or emotional or even from heart but if i ever to see them under the light of my soul,which is independent of my mental or physical existence,all i would see in the dearest friends ofmine if i have to in case they cross the line and try

to enter my soul,i will like i did when Serena tried that,like when Brock thought i'm ashamed of myself that i ever met him or you,like when Gary thought i'm saying his child isn't his own-i know their reasons perfectly Misty,i do,but you see,in the end to them Ash Ketchum is no more than Pus,Stool,Urine,Cough,Spit,Fa..No LET ME FINISH..i'm just that at the end of the day to them and so are they to me."

Misty(tears,not sobbing anymore) : "Ash..i've to.."

Ash(frown) : "all in good times Misty s..!"

Misty(cries out uncontrollably) : "Ash,just.."

Ash(laugh) : "stop calling a s.. a s..?(Misty almost faints and vomits but the Pokemons make her well)..please stay calm,Misty Waterflower,Hall of Fame Water Gym-should behave exactly like that and laugh to death rather than being a s.. to death..i'm saying what i see in other men or women-stool and urine and what they see in me which is exactly stool and urine-that's the realityMisty,that's the Reality.."

Misty(lying on the grass still sobbing and hickup uncontrollably) : "A..."

Ash(frown) : "Gerninja(water guns,Misty drinks water and the Pokemons again tender her to become better)but you know what Misty s..(Misty almost fainted but the Pokemons cure her up again but she vomits again,Ash finally picks her up and all cure her up),Misty it's ok,i won't call names,but you can't see me like pus and cough no matter what i do..you just can't and..No..i'll finish

this.i know what you're thinking..it's true,Misty,the thing is that neither can i.I can't see you as sludge even if i try to no matter how much.i see good friends and so on then i see you.. you're different than all of them,they need oiling,emotional oiling,social oiling,mental oiling,if i refuse to keep any contact with them they'll move on despite a good heart for me which will always be open and so will i but that's not the same for you,mom or take Pikachu..you can't move on,you'll staystagnant,just like what you yourself became and you know it..

Misty(tears, shivering) : "Ash.."

Ash(choked with emotion) : "you see Misty,i tell you why,yes your first attitude as well as mine were just crush,just infatuation,then we were dependent,on loyalty and so on,trust as is it.if i know i'm not immoral I won't doubt my partner at all,it's not even a question,even if turns out to be true that my partner has cheated on me.even then i'll continue my devotion,and i'll mercilessly kill myself to see if i was the one who was cheating.You see Misty,i didn't come back cause you were suffering like this and didn't have a boyfriend,i came back to tell you that you're more than my soulmate,Misty,you had great fame and still do(Misty tries to hug Ash)..(frown)..why s.., already h..?(Misty totally breaks down again),truely good people who would be loyal to you all life if you gave them the chance,you still do

but now,you've picked up a reputation of a mentalwreck,your battling skills and pokemons will be affected by this and your Gym will be red flagged,leaving you out or you'll die from overworking at this rate,you're destroying yourself while i've become a Hall of Famer in Pokemon Training and can just about do anything i want,i busted team rocket,very few people are there in the world that doesn't adore me and cherish me also due to my helping nature i don't have to keep any contacts with anybody here and their resentment for me will be treated only as sour grapes..(Pokémons again cure up Misty)..Misty,i virtually have a sway over just about anything including pokemons,people are dying for just a nod from me or a smile,i resigned from Hall of Fame but if i want they'll bring me back with cherries after cherries on top of the cake and i'll get away being licentious or loyal or anything that i want to be."

Misty(cries) : "Ash..just.."

Ash(firmly) : "i will finish only when i've got nomore to say..NOT BEFORE..as i was saying no matter how much i thought of you if you take it to be true that is,i still didn't destroy myself what you've set yourself out to do,why? see,i wouldn't have returned to you no matter what if only you had a boyfriend with whom you were even remotely happy..which you've never had as Gary told me before,as your one time closest-possible boyfriend,Green,told me before,as your very Own

Sister Violet told my sources before... "

Misty(sobbing,screams) : "Ash,those.. "

Ash(frown) : "that brat Green got upto you only because a man-wh.. encouraged him to,so i know who he actually is, DON'T BOTHER!LISTEN!

Misty(trying to hold Ash's feet) : "Ash,please..i never..(brusts into tears)

Ash(forces Misty away,screams) : "Stop that!you 4 Brats,i'll kill you if you're not attentive..did i get this in retun(All Pokemons tenders Misty and cures her down)..i tell you 4, either she'll listen in full cognition or i'll forsake all of you, draining away allof your energy..remember that well(All Pokemons becomes extremely attentive).. "

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash, you're.. "

Ash(frown) : "yeah i know it for 17 years now,stay calm!Listen!..then all these would've been out of question had you had a even proper date,but i had a feeling ever present that you won't be able to at all,i gave myself 4 long years Misty, without any contact whatsoever, without any hint of reconsideration whatsoever to anyone,and YOU PROVED ME RIGHT"

Misty(crying) : "Ash i.. "

Ash : "Misty,my faith is from my soul and that's me,i've ever been the soul to you,you've known me exactly as that,may be Brock has as well but did he thought that me not opening up my heart to him amd telling him he was a lunatic unchaste l.. r.. full of pus and stool in front of his date.. (laugh)..

Misty(crying) : "Ash we're..."

Ash(screams) : "no you are!only you are!absolutely none else is there in this life of mine!..you brats,i warn you again,she doesn't get to touch me..only you've atleast tried your hand in remembering me for my remotest goods and NONE else,None,and you're a s..(brusts into laughter)..no,its Ok..just so funny(laugh).. (scream)..you 4 bufoons,i warn you once more..anyhow,Misty s..,about Brock,well Misty s..,where would've Violet been now huh?..where?.. (Misty sobbs uncontrollably)..(laugh)it's funny you know it's funny.open heart discussions? a token of gratitude?a hug?a news?a contact?a postcard?an emotion?a chance? a coincidence?an infatuation? an attraction? a date?a kissy kissy?bedding? that's it then ain't it? generosity,kindness,warmth, gallantry, benevolence..(laughs).. you're remembered for what you are not for who you are..."

Misty(bit startled,sobbing) : "calm.."

Ash(laugh) : "well you should be the one calming down,(grave)Misty,you've vomitted two timesalready..stay calm..(Misty sobbs unctrolablly) if you don't do any you can't be friends,can't say they weren't destined to you but were your very own,can't say you like someone,can't show your partner that you like him or her or can't prove to your fiancée that you really are devoted to him or her.This is what it is isn't it?"

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash,please stop.."

Ash(scream) : "Not till i show the world what i'm and not what i'm not..you can faint Misty, happily now, faint,vomit screech do whatever you want..i'll continue talking till i die out of exhaustion exactly here..kindness, sympathy,help,warmth,valour,sweetness,generosity-for what? did i get associated with all this all the time when i was the little Ash from Pallet Town to only prove that I'm not any of those at all now that i'm Ash Ketchum,Pokemon Master Hall of Fame from Pallet Town? was i cheating everyone when i was all those only to use them and then later throw them away? or is it that i portrey a characterto the closest friends,my own brothers as i imagined which had a written agreement that if i'm away and not paying them any attention and news were coming from everywhere that i'm a Playboy now,that i truely am a Playboy overnight? i don't have any of those traits but still won match after match because i feigned those to my Pokemons? or i cheated used performance enhancements and illegal moves to make my Pokemons stronger though they never could prove it despite testing all of us again and again? Misty,No, don't stop me..i will not again never save any abused Pokemon,i'll never again be kind to my friends,i'll never again help any soul in distress,i'll never again be kind enough to help them to the nearest Pokemon Centre when they're lost in some godforbidden jungle,never again could i be in my cherished oblivion that gets me away from

this garbage that came upon cause i won certain things or thought I could come into a very small help,never again would i be warm to anyone likebefore if i just didn't pay attention to personal matters and didn't want to discuss mine,never again would i be kind enough to give my all to help someone,never again would i be as warm as i was if i'm in a city under public eye and not at a jungle trekking alone,never again would i be sweet to anyone because now i'm famous,never again would i be generous enough to 2 persons to tried to capture my pokemons throughout most of my journey and let them go or help them,never again would i help my enemy if he was dying,never again would i be warm to anyone for it's sake and not to use them later.Thats it ain't it? no..i'm not finished,now that i'm famous means i got all these just by a fluke,and it means i'll stay egotistical forever,in the first days of fame me being from a little town can't get too excited about attention,i can't go to parties with only noble intentions,i can't talk anything else except for joining in a mutual admiration conference with the idea of bedding at any moment,no Misty,i can't be that little boy that charmed you to such a degree that you can't forget him at all..i just can't be those right? also i can't be too focused,single minded on my goal,and give it most priority cause i wasn't matured enough to understand personal relationships but hey my immaturity can make you that much focused for 17 years non-stop,it can

also make sure that no matter what's happening around you, you'll just be with your pokemons by simply playing with them, like to enjoy with them and that will be your first job whole day, year after year for 17 years continuously... your immature cause you travelled across the whole world for 17 years non stop without paying any attention to your girlfriend because you were happy that she's among your close friends, she being herself a world famous gym leader and performer, you'll be immature if you don't understand that your girlfriend is not strong enough to withstand your separation despite her never ever feeling so, your immature enough to not appease her with compliments and flower bouquets in each of her steps as she herself becomes a Hall of Fame Gym Leader despite she herself never even in her worst dreams feeling the necessity, your immature enough to go undercover throwing away your very own single minded goal that has made a person, your girlfriend, whom you know for 13 years being devotion personified go away from you, you go undercover for just enjoyments sake, when you're 1 title away from getting your life-the tag Pokemon Master... you go Undercover just to be killed at any moment cause you're immature... that's immaturity right?.. "

*Misty (tries again to hug Ash, sobbing) : "Ash, you.. "
Ash (forces her away, firmly) : "whom are you fooling around with, s..? i'm not reconciling, this is an emotional circus, just watch the show and*

DIE(Misty brusts into tears), don't get mingled with me..NEVER..(Misty cries out Loud and vomits again, falling down and keep lying down) Shut up unless you're a coward that throws away a matchintentionally cause the opponent is her once boyfriend.(Misty sobbs uncontrollably)..you 4 brats why has she vomitted 3 times,huh?Torquil,if this brat Bulbasaur fails mercilessly torture him all you want and you should join in too Heracross,and you 3 brats,you're getting sent back after all your powers getting drained,is this why your with me? cheating?..Pay Attention....anyhow Misty,as i was saying,if you don't urinate all over your girlfriend in a mutual admiration circus in the name of kissing you're immature,Simply put if you have too much faith in anything or anyone, your immature..so in the end,Ash Ketchum is the greatest Deceit Master of all time but that's the way folks,look at his name,fame,ego,trash talking,attitude,b.. look at him,this man is your Role Model.Misty,things have spun my head,ego, jealousy,all of it-but not to such an extent that i'll forget who i really am.But(laugh) you see this exact statement is the Greatest Deceit Master trick of all time(brusts into laughter)..Misty,you want to rememberAsh,remember Ash just for this- Ash's Mastery over Deceit(laughes uncontrollably)... "

Misty(trying to hug Ash, sobbing) : "Ash.. "

Ash(throws her away,sternly) : "Stay Off,b.. it's not that easy to bed me!Stay off and keep your mouth SHUT!"

Misty(sobbs unctrolablly, lies down in grass)

Ash : "vine whip her down till i tell you...so you see,Misty i'm alone except my mom and my pokemons none else is actually there who has infinite faith on me,Gary says "i'm not that type".Today i told him he,in front of everybody except Tracy,just casually,by the way Tracy was already told he f.. you even in orange,stop her scream,so that was already taken care off as he was told he l.. the v.. of your sketches then tasted the real,when you yourself invited your beau..so that's all..She doesn't move or scream but you know now exactly what to do,do that and be Attentive..

so Misty as you see Tracy was already taken care off,now these f..birds.. as they were too Ashtonished,i also said just like

[

Gary : "um..ya,i feel you still want Misty."

Ash(grin) : "Gary i may but you see,some had had their chances"

Gary(frown) : "Ash?"

Ash(smirk) : "Gary,Gary,you're such a beautiful man,but you know you made a big mistake."

Gary : "Ash,what are you saying?"

Lillie (scream) : "Ash.."

Ash : "Gary,as much as i adore and respect your intuition and intelligence,the virgin dreamt you,and you responded to the worst sco.. l..s..."

Lillie& Daisy(scream) : "Ash,you b..."

Ash(smirk) : "picked the wrong flower,Gary that's

all."

Gary(stunned) : "Ash,this.."

Professor Oak(solemn) : "Ash.."

Ash(smirk) : "and Daisy,I'd highly suspect your.."

Daisy(shouts) : "that my pre..(breaks down)" Ash : "you forgot the necessity that you never have for 30 years or more..(grin).."

Lillie(tears&scream) : "Ketchum"

Gary(solemn) : "Ash, you've gone.."

Ash(smirk) : "is that a shared thing Lillie,between the sisters and Gary and Trace and.."

Gary(screams) : "Ash.."

Ash(smirk) : "the child that Lillie has, it's shared or are you single owne.."

Gary(trying to hit Ash) : "Ash.."

Ash(stopping Gary,Sternly) : "don't start this,i can legally do whatever i want,my contract here doesn't end till next month,i'm a shareholder here which was conferred by Elite 4 and can't be terminated till my general contract ends and the rules state if i don't physically harm,none can stop me legally"

Ash(smirk) : "Dase,with all staffs,who wa.."

All in Unison : "Get out"

Ash(Firmly) : "you can't do anything about it,i can set all pokemons including your own upon you and the whole Elite 4 upon you immediately if i want,and that too legally cause i'll get out of any trouble via my Fame,and all the pokemons are on my side so is the Elite 4 and especially Lance cause they know i can start a team rocket 2

anytime if they don't lick my boot as much as i want them to,So,Shut Up!"

Professor Oak : "Ash.."

Ash(smirk) : "i know this place for ages,i guess whether the interbreeding of pokemons stems from the staffs sharing themselves.."

Professor Oak(firmly) : "Ash.."

Ash : "and the head is involved with sweet sweet students..i smell ah!history.."

Professor Oak(solemn) : "Ash,you still want to meet Misty today that too here.."

Ash(scream) : "YES!and Lil, this is for my Mom,Dase,you too,that day shouldn't have happened no matter what I did to Misty,Gary you should've apologized immediately after what these two b.. did that day and you know exactlywhy - your were saved that day when my mom shielded you from you own family after the Cheerleader scandal broke by not driving you out of our home on that frosty night,which all else knew to not be true giving you the time to escape via a different rout,all you did when your real turn came was to evaporate in thin air due to your infatuation with this f.. l.. only to come after Professor Oak told you to and if somebody present today in this Lab tries to sabotage my meeting with Misty today here in full privacy just as i've demanded,this Lab will lose it's reputation and pokemons and i swear on that."

Professor Oak : "you expect.."

Ash(firmly) : "exactly,Professor,you more than

anybody else know my power and reach, and you also know why i said about you what i did, with all due respect, you cringed the day my Mom was mobbed just outside the main entrance for My Actions by reporters, my mom would've been harassed in front of what she always thought to be her very own home only for the timely intervention from Tracy to save her that day and only because of whom no volcano has erupted here and you got the fame using my name while my mom was humiliated in front of you- Trainers are your Responsibility not Kindness, and Tracy was infact the only one having the guts to confront his wife no matter how much he cherished her over her actions. A Pokemon Battler retorts only when the opposition is weak enough. None stopping Misty from meeting me today HERE. And all of you know Misty, if you say what i told you, she'll only be too eager to meet me and if she is forced not to, I'll just abduct her today itself even from your own rooms.. Gary of all knows my Pokemons well and what they can do.. GOOD BYE. but still what a lovely place.. the flowers.. anyhow enough for a day hey Lil, Dase ? and thank Ganger that you had to listen to me without leaving, come along Boy... oh and just that your baby doll may be needing a mental asylum after what i do to her today, sorry but as usual nothing that you can do about it cause Officially i'm getting an award for forcing the dreaded Cerulian Water Queen to submit the surrender

letter by herself as i promised..(laugh) you should be thankfull Dase,Lil,really 4 years and no greenery yet i lay my first personal touch on your beloved mentor and the Unshakable Water Empress runs like a h.. b.. wanting to be f.. around by me all life as if nothing ever happened..such pity..see you later though,if you can bear with this one."]

Misty(tears) : "Ash..i knew what Lil and Dase did..but..what has happened to you.."

Ash(firmly) : "IRONY.and as you've seen none was there apart from Professor Oak"

Misty(sobbing) : "you're tearing apart one by one everything you ever had in past for a life that's just..you think they never gave you chance,what would you get Ash..?"

Ash(Firmly): "THE TRUTH!you see none would remember me expect my mom and my pokemonsas ever being the same cause they don't read my soul,but i can see you do,you surely have had your chances but you didn't give up on me.But(laugh) you see Misty s.,now i've harmed your family,well that's the ultimate ain't it?(laugh) let us all battle this one to our death.."

Misty(sobbs unctrolablly) : "Ash,you've become a demon.."

Ash(laugh) : "exactly"

Misty(sobbing) : "because you're imagining them to be the same.."

Ash(solemn) : "Misty,I stood up for my mom because i'm leaving for good,she won't come with me, choosing to be humiliated to death here no

matter how much i've tried to force her to, and i myself being a vagabond playboy, i gave up and infact this is my last visit to Pallet, i want to start a farm so that My Mom has enough to support herself and all that, i'll let her live here and run things via sources from far away till she breaths her last or me whichever comes earlier" Misty(tears) : "Ash..you're not this..no, Ash don't.."

Ash(laugh) : "Misty!Misty!Misty!Misty!still ever hopefull that his Ash can fight back his mental demons to f.. her all her life..(laugh,Misty cries uncontrollably)(stern) Misty,why is it so that despite all this you think i am not an evil demon? What is it exactly?huh? no matter what i do to you?Misty, you're my biggest opponent,i just can't kill you at all(brusts into laughter) in Orange Rudy said exactly this when you refused all comfort and future to suddenly stay as my b.. oh! sorry that's Trace(laughes uncontrollably)..how did i.."

Misty(lying on grass,tears rolling through,sobbing) : "i've died long.."

Ash(shouts and shakes Misty Vigorously) : "Show your f.. chastity now!huh?! b.. i say names and you get s.. all over?huh?.. that's your f.. chastity..(spits aside)..same as that..FIGHT!(Misty again lies down crying uncontrollably)..you see

Misty,sympathy for friend is one, determination to follow him no matter what with blind devotion atthe age of 14 and half just to get back a bike(huge laughter)..no don't stop me

b..,please(laugh)..Green or Rudy would really have

to struggle hard to get a better soulmate.. "

Misty(brusting into tears,standing Up,tries to hug Ash,Scream) : "Exactly that!But i'm YOUR Ash! I'm only your soulmate! you're my soul,Ash,you're my.. (tries to wipe off her tears)..i'll only want you..i'll still only want you no matter what you do to me..i'll want only,only you even if you kill me right now...I can't but to..I tried Ash,many times i just.. couldn't and i know i can't ever..you've tormented and insulted me to death today,yet..yet see i'm still longing for you Ash..just moments apart..i know now what i saw that day in you..my,my own soul..and that moment of magic will captivate me forever,no matter what you do or become.. because..because..i..know you're not what your showing to the world to be..you..(Misty again vomits on Ash's body and almost faints and Ash makes her lie down,the Pokemons treat her,Ashwashes the vomit by Kingler..) "

Ash(sternly) : "enough Misty,i got you.no I'm alright,vomit atleast gives you the cough as disgust or just physical weakness,they don't cheat on you unlike a s.. kiss that the stool also insults you..so you see,you can't but to be like this this term of life,that i can see as well.All i want to know is that if there's someone else too..if not, i might become even more cruel to you..No(laugh)..No Misty,not for my jealousy of you or your beaus nor am i trying to reconcile,i was nowhere when you had all those guys only a smile away to f.. you to heaven(laugh)..i'm just saying that,look this i

am,you'll be so much happier to cut me off.."

*Misty (simmering tears,trying too hug Ash,shouts)
: "Ash..i told.."*

*Ash(sternly forces her away) : "and there were 3
guys and Gary Oak and X and Y and who cares
how many girls for me,well as for me none getting
in as a fact that the door is closed for one and if
not that one then permanently and the other 300i'm only
happy about, they're good enough,but to
me they're eternally stool and cough.but i just
needed a clarification thats all.."*

*Misty(brusting out in tears again) : "you want to
know who is for me the 3rd despite me telling you
just now,why are you doing this to me Ash,if i
could i'll tear my chest open and show you the
inside that..that there's only you..Ash you know my
parents left me when i was 5 and half,i only have
had my pokemons and my friends and my sisters
but in that 2 it's always one,you still have two i'm
on one,and..and I want my two but my two isn't yet
to trust me despite saying i'm his soul,still,am
i..am i then only an extra for your soul,Ash,as if
you're only saying it...(brusts into tears)"*

*Ash(sternly) : "i want to get this point clear,the first
is the luck,i never saw my dad either,and in that
sense it might be extra but who says one isn't.."*

*Misty(crying) : "Ash!leave this soul business,just
leave it!..and for one moment LISTEN TO ME!"*

*Ash(frown) : "fair enough,because i said you canread my
soul it means i'll f.. my soul immediately..
(laughs)...soul is h..b..(laughs uncontrollably)..*

Misty(scream,crying) : "Ash!Shut Up!i'll have a heart attack if you.."

Ash(sigh,trying to cheer up Misty) :

"Ok,Ok,fine,calm down..take your time,you brats you know very well what happens if she dies,pay attention..."

(few Moments later)..

Misty(sobbing, whispering almost) : "Ash..no..it's all right..Ash,you've to listen to me and then answer me,i just don't have the strength now to scream..and for once please don't just point to me as unchaste..i'm swearing to you that yes i never had any..any chastity (brusts into tears)..(few moments later)..but still listen to me..please,agree?"

Ash(Scowl and Frown) : "with Pleasure,just carry on,i've finished my side anyhow almost.go on."

Misty(tears) : "just tell me you want me or not?"

Ash(laugh) : "a f.. up body so f.. up that there's noj.. left? (laugh)..when i can get j.. h.. s.. all day?

(laugh)?..i know what you're taking-()-so you're hardly sane and going towards death day by day..so you're a mad,dying,all f.. up j.. s..,why would i want you?(laugh).. you're a r..f..s.. insane and slowly dying now That's all(laugh)..and then you say 'am I extra for your soul'..(scream)you're an extra s.. for all souls including yours.. that's all"

Misty(lying on the ground, uncontrollably sobbing,vomits again,which is cleared by pokemons,almost has an heart attack but pokemons treat her,almost faints but again

pokemons tender her,fewments later) : "Ash,i want..death is.."

Ash(frown) : "your body will die,mind will die,would you die?"

Misty(crying,still lying down) : "just tell..(sobbing uncontrollably)

Ash(frown) : "look i'm telling you..i could've given you a f.. flower and dated you then f.. you all i want...MISTY WATERFLOWER,MY FIRST TRAVELCOMPANION,NOW CERULIAN CITY GYM LEADER,HALL OF FAME is she a b.. to die like this?..are you hearing it?"

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash... you're looking at my condition..i can't move out of here..Ash..you said..this..i can't.. can't talk anymore..Ash..just.."

Ash(hugs Misty firmly,near her ears) : "Listen s..,what do you want,why am I here?where's your vitality now,Show it?i'm hugging you now,i can f.. you here till you die out of exhaustion,which won't be long at all..i want you..huh?..what do you want?..to be f.. around all day...JUST FIGHT! (breaks hug,Misty lies down again)

Misty(tears) : "A..."

Ash(frown) : "Gerninja she wants to drink some water"

Misty(lying down,tears) : "Ash,i'm Misty remember?i'm your.."

Ash(frown) : "yeah I remember you, you're a s.. (Misty cries out loud then sobbs),right but according to you all you're trying to say you wereor are my friend,what friend? there's no such thing

as that..you had a reason,i had more reasons,friends finish... what's the big deal?.. You're unnecessarily harming yourself..Green is a good man,why don't you just date him..i know him extremely well..i can fix the date myself today itself..he'll make you his queen all life,loyal..why not Misty,come on(tries to take Misty up).. "

Misty(lying down, sobbing uncontrollably) : "(bit loud voice)Ash,NO!(Ash lets go of her hands)...i..i cherish only you Ash,i want you...only you..always..always have...Ash you can check my.. "

Ash(scream) : "shut up!i know you well enough to understand whether you're a s.. or not,i know all about your f.. chastity...show me your mind...who is there,who is.. "

Misty(whisper) : "you..only you.

Ash,only..you..jus.. "

Ash(Frown) : "f.. you once more?"

Misty(almost has a heart attack, pokemons tenderher,vomits.. 30 minutes later,Ash): "..saw..saw that?..i dont have much left..i cherish only you and would and tell all...tell all..i've no grudges against you..Ash..(chokes) "

Ash(scowl) : "you've got 70 more years to tell them that youself..the 2 heart attacks you thought were about to happen is your mind fooling with you and that your dosage today hasn't been taken..i know everything about you inside out...don't be a fool killing yourself cause someone is telling you your're a wh.. and you can't

take it cause your're not.. that's chastity ain't it?"

Misty(sobbing uncontrollably) : "Ash,all those guys,i just didn't know.."

Ash(frown) : "Misty,i know first hand what comes with fame and skill and additionally for girls if they are less dark..i know it..but your problem that i say you've been f.. around by all and any but that's wrong and because i'm not admitting that, it has given you a near heart attack and yet you say you're chaste...what kind of f.. b.. mindset isthis,Misty, (loud)huh?!?..how have you got into the hall of fame with this sentimental stupid b.. mentality?..(laugh)..well its just hall of...(sigh).. what's your problem exactly tell me Misty, it's ok s...,i'll adore you to death(hugs Misty)..you want me to kissy kissy you sweet?.."

Misty(sobbing,hugging Ash,whispering): "just you..."

Ash(throws Misty off,scream) : "then Fight! I don't care for hall of b.."

Misty(sobbing uncontrollably, scream) : "Ash...i can't.."

*Ash(scowl) : "yes you can take infinitely more and you WILL...see,you want JUST ME,THE BODY-
COUGH AND STOOL,so,i give you a solution,why don't i abduct you,take you to Sinnoh,f.. you all i want and then throw you into the sea without your pokemons?.. that's a good beau ain't it?(laugh)..
(Misty lies down,tears rolling down her eyes profusely)what's your problem exactly,Misty,huh,*

what's bugging you so much,that i'm calling you as.. but you're not.. just this? or that you want me to f.. you and make you a s.. if you think you aren't one already?what is it that you want?

Misty(few moments later..tries sitting up,sobbing,Pokemons helps her to sit up) :

"Ash,i've had my dream..you don't have to abduct a dying mad s.. like me..but you can leave me now..i'll die exactly here..i've got my dream,Ash..my Ash still came back for once to me..that's it..no, that's ok.my Ash.wants to leave me again.. it's ok..i left him.. didn't I..i was the one leaving him after..after Jhoto..then i shut the door..i didn't cont...(completely breaks down,lying again, crying)"

Ash(solemn) : "i see too fond, alright,but the question is are you going to suicide?..."

Misty(sobbing) : "an enormous dose of ()..then..then i'll call all those f.. who ever wanted to..(Misty breaks down again, vomits,etc,few moments later)..saw that right?..no you deserve more..have a happy life..Ash.. it's alright..forgetme..it's.. (chokes with tears)..

Ash(solemn) : "the problem is that alright i'll anyhow leave you but there's a bigger problem-you have-nobody to look after you,whereas the whole Elite4 will lick my boot all i want and provide me a s.. everyday till i die to f.. around..who do you have?your a Hall of Fame gym leader but already red listed for your recent activities, they'll humiliate you to hell may be even take away all

your pokemons cause there's many whom you didn't entertain and now they'll try to take revenge...yeah there's no darth of people in Cerulian itself to f.. you up all day and night uncontrollably still and they will revenge or not..but that's not exactly my position is it?"

Misty(sobbing,scream) : "Ash,you..you can't leave me cause you still want me..still..you can't live without me but you just think i'm not chaste cause i even agreed to date in the first place...you..how can I apprise you Ash..I..(again completely breaks down)"

Ash(frown) : "i can't leave you cause you've got none to look after you except this Ash Ketchum,Brock of all people wanted to hook you up with f.. b..,your own family,Lillie wants that,Violet wants that,Daisy not sure but still wants that,your now family Tracy don't have the guts to face me and scream his head off to say Misty is slowly dying,her skills are too great for authority to do anything,you need to help your friend',what does he say,'come back,your doll can't live without you,'..as if i'm f.. every b.. i see,your Misty,your Misty,your Misty..Misty is Misty's,not mine..Misty is my friend first then whatever later,i would help my friend may be,but no,you f.. Misty and now f.. someone else,so Misty is a bit sad.. that's all then?..Gary Oak..who has my biggest respect in the whole world,was totally flustered as to what to do..he just didn't know what is what and couldn't help you no matter how much he wanted..Brock of all,been a gym leader for a few

years,travelled all over the world,has waterpokemons himself,Cerulian has enough so that his studies aren't hampered and he can't take up your role for just 1 week and let you come to me in Unova Finals for youself to see how many b.. i'm f.. everyday,huh?!?Misty tell me,you were stupendous,unmatched,but you also wanted your personal life,who Misty,tell me who stopped you from coming to Unova finals at least..who?YOUR FAMILY.this is YOUR family..i have none like that... except my Mom i'll spit at anybody and throw them away except you,and No i did but i didn't spit at your face..why cause i for sure know,that this s.. no matter how much she gets f.. by all at the end doesn't have absolutely anyone but me when it comes to understanding her and give her a hand..NONE..not one damn brat ever protested all those who were licking thier lips over your body to f.. you for the rest of your life since you were around 15..NONE! during our own journey,later,NONE!... except you know who..every b.. knew my locations atleast during Kalos leaguefinals,Unova League Finals, Elite4 finals,when you were depressed and slowly dying..and Green of all people went there to challenge me during Unova Elite4,no i didn't know who he was at all..but after he left i realized..that f.. was saved as i didn't know him..else he and his pokebrats wouldn't have been seen in this world again...no one tried to contact me face to face cause i insulted them

*to death(laugh).. it's funny you know it's funny...
you're judged by words..(brusts into laughter)... it's
funny (laughs).. "*

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash,i don't have.. "

*Ash(frown) : "any loyal customers to f.. me loyally
but you?(Misty crying uncontrollably).. that's so
cause you never gave Green a chance, atleast he
had the guts to face me,he was a real MAN,you
would've been so happy if you chose him...these
m.. even didn't have what to me an unknown
stranger had..why would I come back Misty,huh?
why would I bother about you?..yes I made a
mistake,but if only they asked me withoutdragging you
in,i would've,to them I'm because i
had you, that's it..nothing else..(laugh).. it's funny
you know it's funny(brusts into laughter) "*

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash,I.. "

*Ash(frown) : "no exactly not,you didn't have to be
bothered at all either,it was between us,you and
me-only,not these mup..,they evsdropped me all
their lives to see our relationship..why so much
interest?huh?..and if it was so interesting,then
they should be the first ones to arrange the
meetings..Gym..i've heard this word for 12 years
now..no don't stop*

*me..Ganger...Gym!Gym,Gym,Gym..you know what,i
can f.. up all gyms in the world exactly now and i
could when i did my trials at Unova and i
absolutely did in Kalos,not a single gym-brat in
that whole area including hall of fame specials did
a fig to me...and now i can destroy every authority*

in Pokemon world and reshape it according to my wishes,LEGALLY..Gym!..did i tell you not to come to my Unova Finals..Gym..where were those foryou,where was Brock of all people,where were your sisters of all people,just 1 week and thats all or was it the authority..(laugh)..tell me Misty,which authority,who,which f.. brat stopped you then from being with me...who(frown)...people have talked about me not caring for personal life,where were those when you so much wanted your personal life?..hall of fame,hall of fame..great Gym leader?..Misty,i tell you i was a h..b.. which i still am now but i was a f.. i.. then too,else I would've come myself during Unova and not be a selfish b.. and go for 24 f.. badges..but still,these b.. could've called me once,i would've beaten the hell out of you and taken you back whether you liked it or not..but no..come back Misty isn't happy..f.. that...Misty isn't happy.. that's Misty's problem not mine..i want my problem or my friend's problem that i can help..come back she doesn't know what to do about the Gym none can beat her and she can't quite trust anyone,she doesn't really know what to do.. challenge her,beat her take her out for a week..Misty isn't happy, Misty wants to see you,Misty want you to be back,Misty is crying for you,STILL NOT THE REAL PROBLEM LIKE A MAN-MISTY CAN'T BE HEALED UNLESS NONE DEFEATS HER IN A PROPER BATTLE,NONE!..what the f.. they thought you were Misty,because what those 3 did in their younger days and you

mentored and babysitted them?..Brock was d.. all over your skills and looks,Trace was too happy to play the good guy,the only sane person there Gary Oak just couldn't be able to do what he desperately wanted and that is to tell me exactly those cause he just didn't want to mingle in that posion that was killing you there-the Glamour and all...Misty ever cherised Ash and he was ever a bufoon..he's gone,keep whinning a bit,find someone else..(scream)that s... business..why were they interested about us then in the first place?huh?..why?...Misty,just tell me who stopped you..please..(laugh)..they'll have some fun for the rest of their forsaken lives if they survive the firstbit(brusts into laughter).. "

Misty(sobbing) : "i made a mistake Ash.. "

Ash(scream) : "Shut up you b..!you made no mistake,i made it when i couldn't be less selfish!.. (laugh)..but this is Decit Mastery.. trying to deceive you..(brusts into laughter)...once a playboy always a.. "

Misty(sobbing,scream) : "No,My Ash is only Misty's boy, that's all, nothing else..i..(trying to stand up) "

Ash(frown) : "Ganger,she lies down,stays there,doesn't talk, cogitate every word i say,till you know my singnals...right..i'm no s.. patented boy so that when she cant get a customer she can get me..(Misty sobbs uncontrollably,Vomits..again few moments)...6th time..this is why i'm here vomit Empress...fools can't beat you,none can except

me,none can look after you,except me,none will understand you,except me, you a angel to all, except me, you're an Idol,a dream,an elusion,a saviour of all,(brusts into laughter)..Misty,see youwere dying there in Gym, ABSOLUTY NONE HELPED! so,still me,still me..(laugh)..sweet sweet Misty s.,so sweet,(scream)NONE BUT ME!..Misty,you need me in every step..you need Ash Ketchum all your life,every moment... that's why i'm here...i want to help my little friend,little playmate Misty who simply gave her soul to me all times,a little girl of 12-13-14,my Ash,my Ash,my Ash..all the time.. that's why i'm here today..just for that..she believed in me more than i did..Misty(laugh)..you were a future gym leader,i was a b.,still then knowing all,'no,i'll go with stupid idiot Ash rather than being with Rudy in Oranges..'(laugh).. 'i'll not leave you till you repay my bike,you bufoon(laugh).. 'get that bug off..catch it..or i'll smack you to death,you jerk'..(laugh).. 'are you sure,you'll be alright without me,Ash? " (scream)...that's why i'm here...you need help and i've to be the last resort for that,STILL...Misty,i've been without you extremely well but you're the one that needs me all time...many s.,man-wh.. i'veseen all for a reason hanging around me,EXCEPT MISTY,always,ever...Misty has no reason whatsoever to be with me,infact you were my only travel companion who didn't have any f.. reason to be that..and only she without any reason,my Ash,my Ash,my Ash..always..(scream) That's why

i'm here..

*but you know(solemn),you can get what i'm doing
even way more from*

*Green,Prin,Trin,Breen,Sheen..but you would die but
to do that...(scream)that's exactly why i'm*

*here..get this obsession for Ash Ketchum out and
get someone else in,cause Ash Ketchum won't*

*return after today..(laugh).. it's funny you know, it's
funny how they evsdropped us..it was a movie,a*

*comedy,a movie where the two protagonists
wants to f.. each other off just the next moment..*

*(laugh)..i remember them...(laugh)..it was a
movie,once it finished-'nah!restart that again..so*

*good movie..wanna see it..come back Misty isn't
happy'(laugh)..and by the time the protagonistshave died..*

*(laugh).. it's funny,Misty its very very
funny(laugh)...very funny(laugh).. anyway*

Ganger,leave it"

Misty(few moments later,sobbing

*uncontrollably,feint smile) : "Ash,you'll again come
back to me you..(chokes with tears)... "*

*Ash(brusts into laughter) : "what a timing,Ganger
work,for your f.. answer s..,and you know why*

*you're so desparate,the answer is exactly what
you told me yourself 12 years back..*

*(song,immitates) "What makes me Misty most of
all/in our final Curtain call/is that i'll NEVER see*

*you/again" (laughs uncontrollably,Misty
uncontrollably cries).. (scream, shivering*

*voice)exactly that..and you were humming another
day, "two of a kind/who would've guessed that you*

and I/someday somehow will have to say/goodbye" (bursts into laughter)... exactly that...(bursts into laughter)..oh and this also is Deceit Master especiall,make her emotional kill her cause you're jealous of her success and newbeau Green (bursts into laughter)...Bulbasaur care..Ganger off.. "

(10 Minutes later)

Misty(lying down,has almost convulsions, sobbing) : "Ash,just one hand.. "

Ash(Choked,Agitated,hugging Misty again) : "..do I want you?do i want you?why am i doing this to you?(stern but shivering voice) Do i have to announce that i still value you as a friend on top of my voice for the world to hear?(Misty hugs Ash,this time Ash is too oblivious to realize) can't they have the remote cognition to..(but then suddenly, shivering voice,breaks the hug but straight Looking at Misty's Eyes)can't you see...can't you see i still am what i was even when i first met you,Misty?"

Misty(with tears,sobbing,few moments later) :

"Ash..i perfectly understand what your trying so so hard to suppress and get away from,i know why you've taken up all this self inflicted pain upon yourself..no LET ME FINISH!"Ash(absent minded as if reminiscing something) :

"continue"

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash tell me,frankly..do you... (again hugs Ash,Ash is again too oblivious to force her away)..you want your second kiss

today?" (bursts into tears)

Ash(suddenly as if wakes up,breaks the hug,scowl) : "no urine"

Misty(sobbing) : "or bed,or date or..but you'll then say it's..(vomits on Ash's face,and almost faints,Ash catches her, Pokemons tender her,Ash again washes off and then tender Misty)"

Ash(frown) : "you still believe that i'm not deceiving you and only want to f.. you and leave totally breaking your heart so that you'll die quickly?"

Misty(uncontrollably sobbing,lying on the grass,scream) : "..NEVER..my Ash..is..(vomits again,all again)"

Ash(hugging Misty,solemn) : "happy now?Misty,its 8th..just stay calm(breaks the hug but hold Misty'shands firmly)..you surely don't want any of those do you?"

Misty(sobbing,trying to hug Ash again) : "All and None of those.if there was ever a perfect thing to be able to do or describe i want that.."

Ash(firmly,forces her away) : "these emotions don't suit you.."

*Misty(trying to hug Ash,crying,scream) :
"Ash!please!Don't stop me!Ash,please, atleast let me hug.."*

Ash (firmly,forcing her off): "No!a grown up b.. like you should know mental demons aren't a kiss and hug away to go out,its all emotion!let me finish,ok,please"

Misty (crying) : "Ash!Pleas.."

Ash(firmly) : "let me finish!we accidentally bumped into each other and were friends but within a month we knew it's not normal between us,i didn't get you properly then but you surely were too devoted even at that age,i was your dream you held onto me and whatever response you got,got you through your early gym days,then i finally realized your significance to me and confessed my feelings,you were so happy despite all the attention that you got then..."

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash!why are you doing this still? you just told me i'm your soul,but..does your soul too changes Ash..(loudly crying).. "

Ash(laugh) : "of course (laughs), that's why i'm a Playboy and not Palletboy..(bursts into laughter).. (sternly) Misty..(again hugs her and she vomits on his face again,and rest are all same but they talk again after 15 minutes later).. "

Ash(solemn) : "Misty,this was 9th in may be like 1 hour,i know perfectly well the effects of all those poisons you were taking...but you see i'll only finish..so stay calm.. Feraligator & Crawdaunt..get working on Misty,NOW!..all my buddies present,tender her..."

..(15 Minutes later)..

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash, please come..(sobbs uncontrollably)"
Ash(frown) : "where did you have lunch today?no it's a serious question cause it wasn't in my house,so if you vomiting 9 times is about that,then god..."

Misty(sobbing,half shout) : "i can't stand this long enough Ash,just listen to me without disturbing..and no it was at Lillie's home..and it's ok.. that's not what it is.. it's just that..(brusts into tears)...

Ash(frown) : " () is now due cause you can't find you new beau(hugs Misty but just for a moment then lets go)..FIGHT!..and you were using 4 in total for the last 3 months...anyway,speak now...

Misty(cries uncontrollably) : "just a bit.."

Ash(sternly) : "Stop that crying if you want me that much,NOW!(Misty again lies down on the grass,sobbing)..yeah much better,and don't bother,that thing is well healed by sleep powder.. that's exactly why Bulbasaur is here as i had removed those form your room..Misty,you were living in a self created hell while i had fun by s.. f..all around,no matter what happens after today you'll be sent to () in Kanto Elite4 HQ and you'll cure yourself there till then unless your big b.. still wants to sell you to h.. f.. while they enjoy the tips like in GYM...the whole Elite4 all over will lick your boots all you want as that's been my stern order to them and be assured of it,at my current level,the hall of fame is a mere word,it makes no sense as you can see Bulbasaur of all has treated you like any professional doctor and i'm still screaming my head off to him,to which all he's saying that if it goes out of hand he'll tell me well before, Charizard,Talonflame,Noivern all are ready, nothing will happen to you today..and Lance

knows us both individually well enough or if he doesn't,he'll be taught in a very harsh way and if there's one fault in treating you and curing you which has become an official necessity and thus my intervention..i'll collapse the whole system and they know it if they fail to treat those habits out of you once and for all..so,just don't bother,that's myfinal word..alright Noivern(takes Misty to his private portion in the Lab,a small room)..(40 minutes later,Misty comes out of wash room she had to go as the sideeffects were getting heavy on her as she didn't have the doses of ... that day)..i see, it's ok,Misty.. you'll be cured. don't worry..come now..no the outside is far better,and take these(gives medicines)..yeah that's your doeses much lessened(Misty brusts into tears,Ash himself gives her the dose and makes her rest for 15 more minutes,finally Ash returns to the outside with her and 15 more minutes later she is much normal..now,Misty sobbs uncontrollably,Ash once more quickly hugs her and pats her back,then lets go of her)..so you see,as i was saying,despite our confession,i didn't quite get your devotion then to me and i thought you won't mind if i still live in oblivion and don't really ever explain my actions cause i kinda hadn't really got you, thought you yourself live a life under constant public glare,youwon't mind much and also that it's not that difficult for you as you were in a gym,rather i was traveling around,but I didn't understand i was the

central figure for all the things and persona in that gym and rather than going away i should've stayed there for a month,which i easily could do,but got it opposite and thought going away is right then broke up...but i myself was pretty uncomfortable even after i broke up and then when i finally had a grasp of things and realized how you actually might've felt and also with my more balanced attitude to the press,growing popularity,working undercover in team rocket,all my studies and all in Kalos and so on so on and i heard gossips in places that Cerulian Gym and its leader Misty Waterflower were a hot topic and a bit of an elusion.i still didn't bother about it saying i've broken up with you and your life doesn't matter so my uncomfortability is similar to that if during our relationship someone suddenly told me that Misty is doing this and that,i felt a bit taken aback but i just shrugged it off as i thought being a Gym leader itself is hard and people sometimes get into overdrive with young and uniquely talented women like Misty if they looked good and were in the show or performance business like she is,so just brushed them aside never realizing the actual reason which i felt same must be for you when it was found that indeed i was in all beds imaginable all the time.After i got a grip of my personal life and started to show the press what they were up against to save my back,then only i've understood fully your feelings regarding my stubbornness(again becomes absent minded,and

as if narrating his thoughts only, mentally reminiscing something, bit shivering voice) but still i brushed it off saying i'm just jealous that Misty is just living her life then news started to come around that you've become a bit creepy still i just thought you must've had a rough time maybe your boyfriend broke up again and so on, i never bothered about what i heard cause i had my own things to solve and in the meantime i completed my full journey and then finally after Kanto Elite 4 victory, Lance told me Cerulian has become a trouble and that you weren't behaving in a sane manner, which surprised me a bit as i ever known you to be a very tough and strong individual, so i just casually told Lance i'm sorry to hear and so on but then i suddenly saw a picture of yours and um..well...(becomes aware of his words).."

Misty(tears..scream..) : "Ash! Don't stop me now i swear!"

Ash(frown, shivering voice) : "spit it out!"

Misty(sobbing) : "you had never forgotten me to begin with, you never came into terms with yourself just as me with our breakup, your self denial didn't help you and only was irresistibly trying to force you out of your oblivion that you always have lived in since you were a kid and to counter that you became more and more devoted to your training and became more and more rough outside then finally when you realized that you've become a once only Pokemon Master after your busting operation finished and you just totally

decimated a threat like that in an unbelievably funny and nonchalant way, then came Kalos Final that probably has become a household legend now and even made a then obsessive creep like me to have a moment of bemusement when you won the whole tournament till final only with Ganger, who never did anything except fooling around and laughing challenger after challenger match after match as if the challenger said no i cant take it anymore it's so funny and submitted... Sabrina fostered him as papers said but he was at an entirely different level after evolving into a Ganger with you.. Ganger did what he did only for you to withhold him for the final and sending in Noivern who just about did nothing except looking at them and talking profusely whole match and topple 8 challengers as if they were mere novices, as if they're having a brainfade and saying we're going to get insane save us.. "Ash(laugh) : "why are you so concerned with my past act..

Misty(tears,scream) : "Shut Up! i know who you are you f.. brat! and if now you want to disprove me then stay numb."

Ash(laugh) : "you're swearing too, what a (Misty cries out loud).. alright i'll stay shut"

Misty(wipes off her tears, still sobbing) : "having won the whole league like that then you yourself realized that you've become the only ever and your intuition became a reality as none ever has won 32 badges of all gyms forcing the leaders to go

toe to toe with him and beating them in there own game with severe type disadvantages..using Muk in a water gym at (),beating 6 opponents..i know all too you f.. b..(sobbing)..i got it from none other than Serena..that day if you used only Feraligator,he alone would've laughed my whole gym off..and Feraligator was there to remind me our battle over him all those years ago.. (crying)..you f.. b.. you can't forget your Misty for one moment..(scream)NO!..let me finish now b.. (sobbing)..

..you and your bunch probably is a fluke in history and i do realize that no matter what i'm taking. (cries)..no it's ok,that dose was alright.. it's ok..and then your travel companion in Kalos named Serena,who had a big infatuation on you as a childhood hero and having seen you from close quarters what you actually were and that you weren't at all what you were trying to make others to believe couldn't suppress her emotions during farewell and kissed you in a public sea port.No, don't dare to interrupt me,this infact reminded you that how someone you valued and trusted as a friend and little sister or prodigree could stun you like that,you suddenly remembered someone you were trying so hard to forget and if your previous disdain for your old friends weren't enough,this made you turn on the whole world so as to speak and you lost all faith in a good friendship that won't end up in a breach of trust or remind you of someone you just couldn't forget"

Ash(laugh and clap) : "bravo,your a.. "

Misty(screams) : "Ash! i'll kill myself if you conti.. "

Ash(solemn,sigh) : "fine."

Misty(shivering voice) : "this made you turn on just about any long term personal relationships you ever had and though you didn't stop making new friends and all that,you wanted the whole world to be only professional with you and not personal,you resolved you'll only save that for your pokemons and no humans,but no matter how hard you tried to break anything and everything in your way or holding you back not sparing even your starter lab and childhood friends you just created a purgatory for yourself and only self satisfied yourself seeing that they couldn't keep any personal relationships with you,those who realized your attitude like Gary and few others among old friends were spared all else were cut off or torn off yet your natural warmth never left you and those who were curious about this extremelysweet yet ferociously individualitic enigma that just toppled the Whole Elite 4 like a dust particle and who could turn any challenger's most trusted Pokemon against their master and yet all he did was to fool around and by the same way he had defeated team rocket-they just couldn't help but to adore you for your inherent simplicity, honesty and generosity,the exact terms which made you insane as you deluded yourself in thinking these were the very qualities for any kind of relationship be it even a deceitful one,and you realized since these

if were replaced with the exact opposites would only end you up in the exact same position of utter disdain for just about anything and your soul was ever pure so you couldn't even think of those either,so you just became always agitated with anybody and everybody which went out of hand when people wanted to mix with you personally and then on the other hand you knew the Official Tag of Pokemon Master Hall of Fame was absolutely nothing to you nor was Team Rocket asyou had reached a level that was once only and that would make anything legal or illegal just useless so Pokemon Battling world was over for you and that level also made you disinterested in battling or even bothering about anything relating to Pokemon again as you were more than satisfied and you never had the aptitude for research and all cause you just didn't have to know the intricate details as you got a holistic view of virtually all Pokemons and realizing you'll rather spend your life playing with them just like becoming a Pokemon,but then your personal life was in mess because you never could forget someone no matter what you did,just like i couldn't forget you and but your ever increasing and now permanent obsession with never rekindling any personal relationships and your frustration with the mentally inactive life that you suddenly was thrown into as you lost interest in Battling or Research or illegal things,couldn't

commit to any long term personal relationships and most importantly as soon as you felt you never could go back to your roots again due to this self created barrier, you just turned on anything and everything that tried to hinder you from aimlessly roaming around the the whole world and your life's goal became giving everyone a piece of your mind and all the while showing them that they didn't understand your internal pain which you yourself never wanted to admit. Ash, i know what happened, you saw a picture right? "

Ash(grim) : "Stupendous Lecture, really you(Misty frowns and scowls, cries uncontrollably)...all right don't tense yourself..the picture.(laugh)..well, your right, that i saw a b.. "

Misty(cry,scream) : "Shut Up! "

Ash(solemn) : "fine. "

Misty(profuse tears) : "Ash! the b.. you saw wasn't a b.. to you at all, she was your own soul, very own self as well and that's why you suddenly couldn't control yourself when you heard everything about her and her equal plight since you broke up with her, her obsessions and her habits and all, you suddenly realized that for all your efforts to forget her you couldn't and now suddenly had to submit to the realization that your only personal happiness that you so longed for since that break up and tried to find everywhere including among the whole Pokemon species, was only being with her and nowhere else, you were just blown away with feelings after feelings and realizations after

realizations in a very short time span and now that you realized her position and plight you really turned on the whole world to just have a personal talk with her, THAT IS A DATE, and used all your powers to snatch her to you.. "

Ash(shivering voice) : "i care for no b.. "

Misty(crying loud) : "Coward!you didn't have the guts to straight ask the b.. whether she still longs for you every mom.. "

Ash(grave,shivering) : "Misty.. "

Misty(crying loud) : "Exactly! Misty! now i dare you f.. coward to stop me...IT WAS (spell)M-I-S-T-Y,Misty, that was it!it has always been Misty,when it comes to your personal life all you ever knew was only this one word and this one person and anything else was impersonal to you.. "

Ash(shivering) : "Misty.. "

Misty(crying) : "Now where's your hardman devillish attitude,hum?your Misty was your soul and you knew it as well as the back of your hand but only as an intuition,so couldn't really grasp it,now I,MISTY,am questioning you,that YOU COWARD,(crying,sobbing)..why..why..did you just not grabbed your b.. and k.. "

Ash(scoffs,stern voice but low pitch) : "Misty, don't humiliate yourself to a f.. "

Misty(sobbing) : "why,hum?..Ash Ketchum,why do YOU care so much about your Misty that even after all that you subjected her to go through today,still took the utmost care of her,and you can even interpret to the level when she needs to go to

washroom and all..hum?(crying)..why is it you're just so attuned to her even after 4 years of absolutely no contact(brusts into tears)..No..i'll say..you know your Misty as much as she does,you and your Misty are same...even at physical level you know everything about her which only she can know..(sobbs)...your Misty is your eternal soulmate forever,always(crying loud)..you,you f.. coward you can even interpret my every physical needs just as if..(sobbs uncontrollably)..as if mine was your very own body..(sobbs uncontrollably).and even..and even after torturing your Misty to all hells,still every time you touch me..(sobbing)..so gentle..hum?..why,you f.. coward..you just can't be without your Misty..and after all you did to her all insults and all,still you think she's humiliating herself as she may be is just being emotional..(crying uncontrollably) "

Ash(scream,forces Misty to stop by putting his hands on Misty's mouth) : "Enough!(lower voice)Just Enough! when you find a husband,Bulbasaur,Stop her hands..(Misty tryingto force Ash's hands off,but Ash indicates Bulbasaur to bind Misty by Vine-Whip,which he obliges)just listen,you HAVE to find A HUSBAND to get out of your self created obsessive mess and have a nice family and children,you should forget me for good if you want to be happy ever and so will i,but it's far easier for me than you think as i've become famous now i can spent

every day with a new b.. which isn't applicable for an Utmost Perfect Lady like you and Misty,i've learnt the meaning of the chastity seeing only you..**SHUT UP!** it's only your friend's certificate for your future husband..and so someone so pure souled like you,should never even imagine to get mingled with someone like me who intends to self destroy himself **JUST** because he can and i didn't try to grab you today for exactly that reason,think carefully before you do anything and make sure your children have a good life as well as your husband, that's what i'm saying,don't get yourself unchaste by trying to be physical with random people no matter who they may have been to you once or has helped you today,they are f.. b.. and that's there final identity.. your family never understood your devotion to me,nor friends **ABSOLUTELY NONE!**..they are great people,your sister and friends..Ganger..what they didn't do for me would've been done in case of Green,so you must understand that..why they were so interested to evsdrop us same reason..Ash Ketchum was an immature,foolish,sweet, infatuated boy,whereas you were the Water Empress once only.. that's the **TRUTH**.. don't mingle with this Ash Ketchum cause this one is an Once Only utter selfiah b..for both yourself and all around you-**FIND SOMEONE ELSE!GET MARRIED!HAVE A FAMILY!**..i'll let you go but if you try to pull any stunts out of blue or scream or do anything else i'll tell Bulbasaur to sleep powder

you and you will be sent straight to Green's house, on waking up you will see Green not me, and never me again..and don't try to faint then too you'll not see me

again, Ganger, Gerninja, Noivern, help me to calm her nerves, Bulbasaur Sleep powder, just make her a bit dizzy, Pikachu buddy, none comes anywhere near us absolutely none! right get to work...(5 minutes later)...right, Now you're right, i'm letting you go but remember the conditions.."

Misty (tears in her eyes) : "You wanted a clarification on our breakup right?"

Ash (Frown, shivering) : "yes, and that is we're done."

Misty (bursts into tears, hugging Ash, this time Ash himself has tears in his eyes which he quickly wipes off but can't quite force Misty off the hug) : "NO! you're not going anywhere..you..COME BACK, Ash..just come back..i.. (chokes)"

Ash (breaks the hug but keeps holding Misty's hands firmly) :

"so you still want the reconciliation after all that i did to you (Misty trying to hug Ash, tries to kiss him, But Ash stops

her) No! it's what h.. s.. do and you've got nothing to do with

them. you don't need to taste or smell my cough and spit and mouth cavity, and get a hold on yourself, cut this stupidity! (Ash still firms holding Misty's hands)

Misty (screams, crying) : "Ash! (crying, low voice) either you'll

be my Husband or i'll stay unmarried forever pestering you

beyond all deaths..you.. "

Ash(laugh) : "are you sure that i'll be f.. only Misty s.. even if

i do f.. around any random s..?(brusts into laughter) "

Misty(sobbing) : "Ash Ketchum,you'll only ever f.. aroundyour unchaste Misty s.,your soulmate,first and forever

travelling companion and the only girl you will ever have any

kind of feelings for no matter where you are with whom and

what you are,you're doomed to this inevitability.you can't forget Misty and..(sobbing)..today itself you're a demon and

your just..your completely destroying yourself only to see if

your Misty follows suit or not...you..you're just breaking yourself up to rescue your Misty as you..you know you yourself is your Misty...and..i'm only trying to erase you off..I

want to erase Ash Ketchum off...and.. there's No Ash Ketchum at All, it's only Me..I'm Ash Ketchum myself...you

and me...Ash!(screams)..you and me are soulmates...yes that's what you want..you wanted to show me today..only that...YOUR MY SOULMATE..you..and i...we're not different

at all..Ash!(scream)...i.. " (totally breaks down,almost fainted,

pokemons again get her up,lying down)

Ash(laugh) : "Ganger..and this is a Deceit Master trick,Ganger has fooled you,i've hypnotized you..

(laugh)..and

finally is it even you or those f.. doses(brusts into laughter)..all this hallucinations, sudden thought- that no emotion,no body Ash and Me,Me and Ash..soulmates..

(brusts into laughter)..mere wordplay...(shout)..get

UP!..Fight!..find your real soulamte,i'm not what you think

i'm..i'm Deceit Master, that's it.. don't fool youself ,go on vacation take rest go back to the gym clear the mess get a soulmate marry settle down have a family and a good life...FINISH!..Ganger,off.. "

Misty(sobbing uncontrollably) : "and..and..my answer is whatever you are you are..all of it...this Misty you know is..also Deceit Master and the real Misty Waterflower is thereal Soulmate of the real Ash Ketchum..i'll marry only you

for eternity again and again..you f.. b.. you..

(chokes,almost faints) "

Ash(laugh,shakes Misty up Vigorously...) : "stupid b..! what

are you fainting at?alright i'll admit 3 things and ask you a

question.Agree? "

Misty(uncontrollably sobbing,shaking, can't stand,Ash firmly

holding her hands to make her stand,whisper) :

"ye..y..yes "

Ash(bursts into laughter) : "can i add 2 more questions first(bursts into laughter)?"

Misty(tears,sobbing) : "Ash,please.. "

Ash(laugh) : "you thought i was about to propose (bursts into laughter),Misty,Misty,Misty...this is why you're such a sweet s.. "

Misty(breaks down completely,lying on the grass) : "what more?(scream)..what(sobs uncontrollably,Ash bursts into

laughter uncontrollably)..but..um..no.

wait..(Ash about to go away on

Charizard,scream)..ASH(cries)..please...No..

(Ash returns and frowns,uncontrollably crying).. don't go away,please,Ash,i beg of you,don't go..(sobs)..whatever you do,i'll...(trying to get up)..i'll..

Bulbasaur help me please(Bulbasaur helps her up)..whatever you do i'll still come back infinitely many times...Ash,you..you're not going anywhere...you..(sobs uncontrollably,chokes) "

Ash(laugh) : "can i call you unchaste h.. s.. f.. with Tracy?(bursts into laughter).. "

Misty(tears,sobbing,loud voice) : "all you want you cheating

f.. b.. f.. roads s.. i'm not

..not going anywhere away from you..EVER..you

f...b.. "(cries)

Ash(laugh) : "good you're swearing too,so lets see,can i f.. you around whole day today chaste Misty wh.. you look so so s..

(bursts into laughter) "

Misty(sobbing) : "you have done more than..than that...and..and..i've only bedded you all time..you. (chokes).."

Ash(laughes) : "so you're not chaste then?" (brusts into laughter)

Misty(shivering voice,sobbing) : "you're my chastity...you're..you...(chokes)"

Ash(smile) : "and the rest,the mind,gallantry,generosity,soul.."

Misty(sobbing and hoding onto Ash's hand firmly) : "all you.only you.just you.i'm you as always has been,is or will be..Ash Ketchum you're nothing but Misty Waterflower and Misty Waterflower is nothing but Ash Ketchum"

Ash(low voice,smile,holds Misty's Hands firmly,Misty sobbing but smiles shivering,Ash helps her to stand) : "First

Admissions: 1.if i say your my soul i wont do justice to me.

2.if i say your my self i won't do justice to you.

but finally,and this (laugh) no Vulture,be it Cerulian or of any

other goddamn breed,can ever disprove,decline,do anything

about or stop it from being or happening whichever may be

more enticing to them on any given godforsaken moment,is

the Reality that

3.If i say, Ash Ketchum and Misty Waterflower is in essence

the one and the same existence,consciousness and reality but unfortunately appearing to each other as two different bodies,thus having to interact through a godforsaken world

which is ultimately meaningless-i think i'll be closer to describing you.What the hell are you laughing at f.. h.. b..after having to go through the whole world and losing every bit of your chastity...stupid s...?(laughs uncontrollably) "

Misty(smile,tears,Looking at Ash,holding his hands,still sobbing, shivering) : "the question?"

Ash(brusts into laughter) : "what the hell is it Misty s.. huh?!?still won't understand that these all wordplays are exact Deceit Mastery,hum?(brusts into laughter) "

Misty(smile,sibbing, shivering voice) : "i'm deceiving you too,you stupid idiot,bufoon,jerk,you..(broader smile,still sobbs).. "

Ash(smile,holding Misty's hands firmly) : "now that the goddamn world and this appearing difference,which actually has never been,is never being,or will never be there

eventually submerging into the glaring fact that Ash Ketchum and Misty Waterflower were,is and will always be

ONE which simply means that there never was,is or will be

anything called Ash Ketchum or Misty Waterflower but ONLY ONE REALITY that is constant.But if it is to be interpreted and grasped through this nonsense world the ONE have to appear as Ash Ketchum and Misty

*Waterflower,that is Ash Ketchum is Misty Waterflower
and
Misty Waterflower is Ash Ketchum(Misty beams still
tears)
but they due to goddam bodies and world and sense
faculties can't get this body and mind off thus appearing
as
two different entities and they happen to be in a situation
where their relationship and happy passage through this
terrible mess is best described as a term called
MARRIAGE,so I,who is here appearing as Ash Ketchum
is
asking You,who is here appearing as Misty
Waterflower,that
will you be liked to be called Misty Waterflower
Ketchum(Misty beams,giggles and nods and still sobs a
bit)
or in short I,Ash tell you,Misty that if you want to be my
wife,then you can hug me as much as you want(smiles
and
looks into Misty's eyes) "
Misty(shudder,giggle,looking at Ash's eyes, shivering
voice) :
"with pleasure. "
Ash(smile,still firmly holding Misty's hands, looking into
Misty's eyes) : "and the viseversa?"
Misty(smile,looking into Ash's eyes,still shivering voice) :
"be my guest. "
Ash(brusts into laughter) : "so i'm going to marry an
unchaste h.. b..?(brusts into laughter) "
Misty(broad smile,still tears) : "as you've been doing for*

eternity.. "

Ash(smile) : "can i leave you now Misty?"

Misty(smile,tears) : "all you want Misty"

Ash(smile) : "who are you?"

Misty(smile) : "Ash Ketchum"

Ash(laughs,sighs and then smile,still holding onto Misty's hand,looking into Misty's eyes,Misty looking into Ash's eyes

with tears and a huge smile,still shivering) : "then here is ONE,here is TWO and once again like throughout eternity,coming with the sweetest smile at Three(Misty beams)is my soulmate(lets go off Misty's hands finally)Misty!" (both firmly hugs each other,Misty bursts into

tears again,both beaming)

(few moments later both hugging each other)

Misty(hugging Ash firmly,smile,shiver,whisper) : "Ash! we just

can't be broken!"

Ash(smile,hugging Misty firmly,whisper) : "as once more as in all eternity,from our own illusions,we've been woken"

(both keep hugging each other for another few minutes)

Ash(hugging Misty,smile) : "not the body"

Misty : "neither the mind"

Ash : "not even the soul"

Misty : "just can't be defined"

Ash : "that you're just me"

Misty : "there's me as thee"

Ash : "we've been forever"

Misty : "nothing else never"

Ash : "we're what we are"

Misty : "you and me together"

Ash(hugging Misty,smile) : "one seeming as two."

Misty(hugging Ash,smile) : "me seeing me as you".(smile and sob)Thank you Ash."

Ash(smiles but then finally cries) : "ya..um..surely..still no body ok..?"

Misty(sobbing,giggle) : "more than ok.but why are you crying now?"

Ash(trying to stop crying) : "no nothing its..um..it's like..um..i've been a monster...and you.."

Misty(gently caressing Ash's face,smiling,not sobbing anymore) : "sweet little baby monster,too sweet,too tender,too emotional.(hugging Ash)don't bother, remember

what you've said just now?don't worry you'll always be with

yourself won't you?"

Ash(hugging Misty and smiling, tearfull eyes) :

"exactly,thanks Mist..but Mist,you vomitted 9 times,so much

blood there and those i had to by my own hands..

(tears,chokes).."

Misty(smile,whispering): "its ok Ash but..um..

(laugh)..after

today we will always cheat on each other won't we?"

Ash(tears,smiling back) : "all our lives,as usual.indeed"

Misty(giggle) : "i'm LUCKY."

Ash(giggle) : "perfectly mutual."

(both keeps hugging each other in silence for some 7/8 minutes)

Misty(smiling) : "Ash,why did you steal my belongings from my room"

Ash(smile) : "literally or.."

Misty(laughing) : "always both"

Ash(laugh, hugging Misty) : "it's mine actually(Misty beamsand hugs Ash firmly)...but Mist,this is very serious,you must

today itself right now come with me and we'll go to () in () on Charizard...you need checkup...come on..(arranges)"

Misty(smile) : "Ash,i'm alright.."

(Ash takes Misty on Charizard with Noivern,Ganger and Bulbasaur)

(2 hours later after checkup, restaurant,private cell,only Ash

and Misty)

Ash(laugh) : "if i ask you now,would you date me?(brusts into laughter)"

Misty(laughs) : "no you're a stranger(brusts into laughter)"

Ash(laughs) : "so you date known people only then"

Misty(brusts into laughter) : "what do you mean?hum? you..

(both laughs uncontrollably)"

Ash(laughs) : "means you'll date..."

Misty(smile, holding Ash's hands firmly) : "Ash Ketchum,Pokemon Master, Hall of Fame,my soulmate....all the time as usual, eternally happening (both smile)"

Ash(smile) : "and who are you Ms.."

Misty(holding onto Ash's hands firmly,smile) : "not Ms.,I'm

Mrs. Misty Waterflower Ketchum wife of her soulmate Ash

Ketchum"

Ash(smile) : "my pleasure (both hugs each other firmly for a few moments) "

Misty(smile) : "you just know everyone here don't you?"

Ash(laugh) : "Mist,it's just Safforn(both laughs)..been here

so many times,Ganger's from here,my base and resting place before and after undercover,just know everything including the forest and that haunter house(both brusts into laughter)....for recovery and any other things,all you need is me(both smile)... that's all,rest falls mere wordplay.. "

Misty(smile) : "we're dating like 6 years later or more.. "

Ash(laugh) : "in this term of life our first date was on the 4th day of my journey,17 years back in Pewter (both brusts into

laughter)... 'don't go to the gym,you can't beat him,too strong', 'oh yeah,i'll show you', 'fine,you idiot,we'll see', 'yeah!fine!hey,pay your bill' " (both laughs uncontrollably)

(food comes,eating)

Misty(laughing) : "but Ash(laugh)..you knew my physical needs like that(both laugh).. it's so sweet(both brusts into laughter) "

Ash(laughing) : "no just enjoy soulmate,no rush,besides i haven't gazed you for 13 years for nothing(both brusts into laughter)..by the way

why don't i abduct you?(both brusts into laughter) "

Misty(laughing) : "i will,next time you don't call me names(both brusts into laughter) "

Ash : "as i said one question then(both laugh)..added two,you thought like 'just f.. it same thing have to repeat again'(both bursts into laughter)

Misty(laugh) : "i would've pestered Lance's head off and found you(both brusts into laughter)..by the way,hum Ash Ketchum?..this is your date with Cerulian Gym Leader hum?..(both brusts into laughter).."

Ash(smile) : "soully"

Misty(smile) : "souled"

(both share a quick hug again and returns to eating)

.....

Ash(smile) : "hum..how was the first ride,first date,first dinner,3 in one,Dragon Type?(laugh) "

Misty(smile,hugging Ash) : "Ash..i'm just.. overjoyed.. "

Ash(smile,hugging Misty) : "Charizard is great,so is Bulbasaur..you need all the care you want but me first(both

beam at each other)..and you'll get it sweetie...always,AS USUAL.. "

Misty(hugging Ash,smile) : "Ash,just tell me all this,you've

shown me what soulmate really means first hand

Ash...but.. "

Ash(laugh) : "yeah that f..(Misty smiles)..why no f.. can

touch that..(more laughter, hugging Misty firmly)..if i've ever
truely cherished anything,it has been from my soul
because
you're as if born to cherish that for absoluty no
reason,like
my love for Pokemons,like my love for my mom-so by
logicand studies,they are actually me and within me not
outside..and I've cherished my sweet little Misty Flower so
much,then my real Mist is WITHIN ME ONLY,I'm my
Mist..where would i go to search for her?(smile) so just
destroy myself and my Mist will anyhow appear if she
really
is my soulmate..which is I'm my Mist myself..i am
Mist..and
thus she never goes away...(smile,Looking at
Misty)..happy(laughs) soulmate ?"
Misty(looking at Ash,smile, hugging Ash) : "Soulmate"
(both again hugs for a long time)
Misty(breaking the hug,with a broad smile) : "right.why
don't
you come back to the gym?someone has to look after it
permanently you know otherwise we'll have to sell it"
Ash (holding Misty as she holds his neck) : "i'm more of
an
outdoor person"
Misty : "you can still come here.."
Ash : "um..ok i'll give it a thought later,why don't we go
home
now?..um..you came at 2:15 now it's 9:10(both laughs)"
Misty : "Ash, I don't know how you managed to be mine

despite you not doing anything at all like.."

Ash(smile) : "giving an insignificant bunch of garbage called

a flower bouquet to the sweetest flower of my

soul?.."Never

in a million years"..remember this phrase

Mist,hum(laugh)?

(Misty laughs and nods)..how i wished that very day i could

understand myself and tell you(both hugs each other

firmly)..I didn't notice anything either from you,you and me

it's just that anything else is unreal absolutely like saying i'm

not living this life,i'm dead right now ans so on,we don't have

to get physical,mental,sentimental anything-naturally we're

as we both agreed, 'same thing wanting to enjoy own self from two different bodies'"

Misty(hugging Ash) : "what if we both were boys or girls"...

Ash : "twins,brother,sister,mother,son..and so on,so on"

Misty : "this actually is your real strength isn't it? abundant faith?"

Ash : "same as yours,may be a bit more radical"

Misty(laugh) : "i still want to be a Gym Leader"

Ash : "of course you should be,but shouldn't we go home now?"

Misty(hugging) : "where's the rush Ashy-boy,hum?"

Ash (bit stressed) : "Misty,i don't want to face the Lab staffs today.."

Misty(solemn) : "Ash,you do owe them big time but(smile)

hey all will be well i'm with you now,ok.."

Ash(smile) : "i would've had you then as well wouldn't i,Mist"

Misty(a bit surprized) : "yeah..(then disappointed,but very firmly broad smile)..yeah you would've,i can't forget you no

matter how low you stoop to or how high you reach to Ash..

(smiling).. you've got me all the way"

Ash : "(pressing Misty's hands) that's why I took my chance,Mist...i knew my sweetie was all mine eternally as usual..none else i would've even looked at..(laughing)but you still can't get over the fact

that how can this be but neither could i when i first realized

but i just realized it we don't have to put any effort to be together,but you know this is beyond just this body and mental stuff and then only is it real fun thats why its what it

is-a matter of one soul in two separate bodies,not discrete at all.(hugging Misty)Mist,i can't describe soul in words,if i

try as i showed i'll make it impure and i don't want to lose you again in the physical form either"(hug)

Misty(hug) : "You never did Ash,you never did,one soul one body"

(both hug for a long time)

Ash(smile) : "ok Mist, it's 9:25(both laugh).. let's go.."

Misty(smile,hugging Ash) : "as you say soulmate(both smile).. but Ash,i(concerned,sad)..i vomitted on.."

Ash(smile,hugging Misty,tendering her cheeks) :

"soully(Misty smiles)..mere

body,mere wordplay,mere my own vomit (smile,Mist hugs Ash and smiles)...but i'm with my sweet sweet Mist...Misty..Misty..Misty..music,cherishment,dream and soul(Misty giggles and hugs Ash firmly)...come"

.....

Misty(concerned) : "Ash,it was a bit too much.."

Ash(smile) : "Mist,if they've known me,i'll be safe, don't bother come along"

Misty(smile) : "soully(both smile)"

.....

.....(15 minutes later)...

Tracy(cough,didn't see Ash) : "Um..Misty,sorry but the routine check-up..."

Misty (smile) : "oh!hi Trace..it's just.."

Ash(laugh) : "Playboy Ketchum here(Misty frowns at Ash).how was your trip?"

Tracy(bit flustered seeing Ash) : "um..Ash..um..yeah great trip.Misty,i'm really so happy,but..."

Misty(frown) : "what was that Trace?"

Tracy(solemn) : "um no i'm happy for you Misty,very happy.i should leave,sorry to interrupt."

Ash(laugh) : "Mist,he wants to inform all at once that Ketchum will today itself cheat on you(brusts into laughter).."

Misty(frown,scowl,shout) : "Ash! are you out of your mind? Trace has known.."

Ash(laugh) : "me for 4 years.."

Tracy(scowl) : "No Misty,it's ok,i got this,and it's 15 years,and Ash,you.."

Ash(laugh) : "i'm not at all bothered Trace,you now can realize whether i meant it or not that day,i'm only happy for your persistence per precise perception and Daisy and your future.."

Tracy(flustered) : "Ash..it's.."

Misty(frown at Ash then Tracy,solemn) : "it's nothing,Trace,you know this for 15 years,just get going".."

Ash(laugh) : "why rush Mist,he hasn't seen you in months and was very worried of your well-being,be kind.."

Misty(frown) : "he spent two hours with us yesterday..(frown)wait,why aren't you leaving?"

Tracy(tears in joy,tries to wipe it off) : "Ash,i got you mate,i got you,4 years,man,4...you(chokes with emotion).."

Misty(frowns at Tracy and Ash) : "Trace,what's wrong?Ash,what have you..(goes to Tracy to check him)"

Tracy(tears,joy) : "No,Misty,it's ok,i don't want to disturb you two but(smile,tears)..you..Ash..you..(smile).."

Ash(hugging Misty and dragging her to him,smile) : "come on here,Mist..he's alright it's just a quote(looking at Tracy)..ain't it Trace?"

Tracy(beam) : "quote 'persistence per precise perception' ..4 years...see you soon you f.. brat(Ash laughs,Misty all flustered)..i've not swore like in 18 years Ash(Ash bursts into laughter)..but you know Ash..just what to say(both laughs)..you have your flower and i'm so happy(both smile)..but you may know about a certain picture which someone has,this is gonna be far better against the shining moon,given her Gyarados doesn't eat me up(both laugh)"

Misty(frowns) : "I would Trace(Ash and Tracy laughs)..hey,what is.."

Ash(laugh,hugging Misty very firmly) : "just my Misty flower!..got your pose Trace(both bursts into laughter)..."

Misty(flustered,trying to wriggle away from Ash) : "Ash.."

Ash(covering Misty's mouth) : "anyway,i wish i could help you Trace but you see i'm abducted..(both laugh).."

Misty(removing Ash's palms off from her mouth,frown) : "what's so amusing to you Trace that i'm with my fiancée..um.."

Ash(laugh) : "still don't know the right relation"

Misty(frown) : "Husband,oh,Shut Up Ash!"

Tracy(running away) : "yes,your Husband, congratulations Ms. Misty Waterflower..oops,my bad!(both Ash and Tracy laughs)..."

Misty(scream,irritated) : "Trace.."

Ash(laugh) : "Mist!Mist!Mist!Mist"

Misty(whinnying and hugging Ash) : "excuse,excuse,excuse,even outside the Gym,what kind of boneheads feed hoot-hoots in the night,you were right Ash,on one account only that we should've been home and you're Pokemons only are here for food nothing else(Ash bursts into laughter)these little brats aren't even going to allow me a solitary moment with my husband(smile and

hugging Ash),well he's right about that one(giggling at Ash)"

Ash(smile) : "i would hate to say it,but you should release me from your arms otherwise it'll be delayed..haha.."

Misty(laugh,hugging Ash very firmly) : "i wont..and,hum,Ashy-Boy,a stone is still important then, isn't

it?or is it Morality?(laugh)..."

Ash(smile and hug): "all the above,but i guess what treatment poor Tracy Gets or i get,i even related Professor Oak of all people with certain people..really i need your help on this Mist"

Misty : "No Ash,you've gone too far,anyhow don't bother you have a team(smile)"

Ash(smile) : "and my sweetie teammate,much Appreciated(both giggle),by-the-way what are your demands now i

mean i owe you big time now with my position and so on.."

Misty(smile) : "You know what i want Ash.."

Ash(smile) : "Ah,Mist,that's like a part of body,you tell me about movies,dates,dances,lakes and so on whatever i told you..second date that is(both brusts into laughter)...just want peace and

quite with you alone,i've to tell you so many things in details,it'll take years..

Misty(smile) : "why don't you start with going back to the Hall of Fame Book?"

Ash(irritated) : "not that again.."

Misty : "Ash there's been a few Gym leaders who turned down,because of the nasty regulations but i've never heard about any trainers doing this..its a fair thing you know, don't create a mess there if you get what what i mean"

Ash(smile) : "your wish is my command,sweetie.but(whinnying) i'll still trash talk them unless they stop speculating about my sweet flower's entry there and lessen the pressure from upon her-my sweet sweet Mist will be beaming and bouncing all the time(hugs Misty firmly)..."

Misty(smile) : "Ash let them take their time, don't mingle in those official matters, you've already become too rough for you sweetness,very harsh and things have indeed taken it's huge toll in you too.why don't you forget about this farm and all that and come with me take a rest in the Gym?"

Ash(grim face) : "and you'll leave me from 9-6 for gym battles for godforsaken brats.."

Misty(laugh) : "remembering yourself?"

Ash(scowl) : "hey i was never godforsaken or a brat.."

Misty(brusts into laughter) : "still wanna fight Mist?"

Ash(smile) : "all the time."

(both hug)

Misty : "anyhow Ash,you seriously need rest.."

Ash(hugging Misty back) : "Orange with my wife and nowhere else,in a rather secluded island-3 months would do Mist,right?"

Misty(smile) : "1 week would barely-that much for a double facility gym no matter what Lance says given i'm only holidaying"

Ash(frown) : "the damn gym with a god damn symbol"

Misty(laugh) : "what would you do,Pokemon Master?"

Ash(frown) : "as if only Cerulian has a gym and a frontier,why don't they just leave us alone?"

Misty(smile) : "i'll scold them ok?lets go home now sweetie ok?"

Ash(hugging Misty) : "as you say Ketchum"

(both brusts into laughter)

Misty : "just a thing,Ash did you know that once i had developed some feelings for Gary and had a skirmish with Lillie on this as well or just a wild guess?"

Ash(solemn,cajoling Misty's cheeks gently) : "Mist,i've caused you so much pain,i want to runaway with you right now(both smile)"

Misty : "um..no Ash, it's just that's not mentioned anywhere,none except Lil and i know,thus.."

Ash(sigh) : "Gary's a beautiful man all round,i would love to be with such a person if i were a distressed soul and i'm a boy,i kinda guessed it,i guess a sixth sense..but enough with it,ok Mist.."

Misty(hugging and stroking Ash's cheeks) : "yes dear,just let's go."

.....(in the lab,9:55)

Gary,Lillie,Profeaaor Oak,Delia Ketchum,Tracy)

Ash(from far,didn't see Delia) : "this looks sinister captain,sorry for the wrong turn"

Misty(smiling) : "bother not crew,captain to rescue"

...

Delia(grave) : "Ash,we need to talk"

Ash(pleading) : "Mom,not in front of Mist.."

Delia(shout) : "What did you tell Professor Oak and all?"

Ash : "oh no...um,just a sec,(whisper to Misty..)"Mist,you better leave manage your sisters later not now

Mist,please,i'll lose it again if they drag you..(Misty just hides behind Ash)Listen i've just got married ok.."

Lillie(scearm,cries,hugs Misty) : "married?huh?!?..what do mean you..(chokes).."

Ash(solemn) : "i didn't have any rings with me so can't show you that right now anyway,why don't i deal with the venerable ones later,except(solemnly) Professor Oak,if only i ever could be given the opportunity,i know i'm unworthy of given what i said,but do i have a chance of rescuing the relationship?"

Professor Oak-"Ash you did go too far you see in my all 55 years here never have i been this much insulted that too from a person i've been so fond of and that too infront of my grandson and family"

Ash(solemnly) : "Alright,I told Mist what i said to you all,Mom please,you don't have to listen to them take Misty with you"

Daisy(trying to take Misty away) : "she's not going anywhere Ketchum,leave our sister alone.."

Lillie(scream,cries,tries to take Misty away as well) : "and she'll never be yours..you..(chokes).."

Misty(trying to force her sisters off,Gary and Tracy tackles them): "Dase,Lil..please,it's.."

Ash(grabs Misty away,sternly,grave voice) : "Mist just go back to the pokemons and Mom please follow her,please i beg of you"(Misty and Delia leaves)...right i hereby tell you and here's the proof(hands Tracy a prescription copy)...Mist was using some substances to forget me and consequently was and isn't well at all...atleast let her be with me today from tomorrow you can start your legal procedures and that Trace,is the exact reason why i did what i did if you think i don't care about her fine but that was needed to be done cause she won't tell anyone else...right,so i began with Gary today,mate i'm sorry and just that.Lillie if you ever can please consider me same to you Daisy,i was totally out of my mind that moment but if you ever find it possible have a consideration and you too Trace,i'm sorry.I just became insane.I don't defend myself but if you ever could please consider me,and aslo for taking your sister as well if you could,don't worry she won't run back anywhere or stagnate or get addictions like she did,this much assured and if she wants she can still be Cerulian Gyam Leader i've no problems with that.and yes she has come to me on her own wish only and yet if you want legal procedures tell me i myself will leave her and admit it in press,no need to strain yourselves and Professor Oak,um..i did cross the line but i

guess you being you may understand i wasn't having the best of times of my life and was about to go to a situation which either would've propelled me to heaven or throw me to hell,i was not quite in myself..i don't have to tell you

much,and i won't ask for anything from you of all.My contract here finishes here 5 weeks later,i'll try to shift my bunch my before but you understand best it'll take time so untill then please bear with me atleast.you won't see me again here around the Lab but please if you ever consider i'll just run in here like i used to when i just about could run.I'm sorry again and please,all of you if you can spare a thought for me.right everybody again my apologies and sorry,but you can see i'm now with for atleast the rest of today,so you've helped still,thanks"(leaves towards Pokemons)

...

Misty(concerned) : "What happened Ash?"

Ash(solemn,angry,very stern) : "you're on Noivern me on Ganger.(releases Noivern and Ganger)

Delia(frown): "Ash!wait don't drag.."

Misty(hugs Ash firmly) : "Ash.."

Ash(concerned,hugging Misty firmly) : "Mom i've got your daughter back, isn't that enough,please comply,please,you can come back through the Lab all you life,just not today Mom,please..and Mist it's ok..just"

Professor Oak(grave): "Ash! Just a sec,your mom won't be troubled at

all,neither would Misty,for them this is ever the same and ever will be.you too for tonight.

Ash(solemn) : "Um..thanks,Professor"

(all of them finally reached home)

.....(night,9:30,just after reaching home)...

(Misty' Phone rings,Violet,shows Ash)

Ash(laugh) : "the lawyers are here already..(brusts into laughter).."

Misty(frown) : "Ash!i'll handle it,get things ready.."

Ash(murmur) : "f.."

Violet(almost crying) : "Mist,what,where are you?why.."

Misty (solemn) : "Viol,we've patched up,where are you now?"

Violet(screem,tears) : "that b.. will.."

Misty(solemn) : "Viol you're tired now just go home,Brock will be expecting you,please..i'm fine,ok.."

Violet(sobbing) : "who the hell that brat thinks he is?because.."

Misty(solemn) : "Viol,Ash didn't force or threaten me it's totally my choice.we are getting engaged very soon and i'm happy only with him..just keep yourself safe and return safely,call me once you've reached home and settled down"

Violet(sobbing) : "the b.. told Lil.."

Misty(solemn) : "Ash,has told me all of it himself,and please i beg of you,just return safely first.."

Violet(sobbing) : "just stay safe Mist..i'll call so will Brock.."

Misty : "yeah,keep safe,will connect soon"

Ash(laugh) : "that b.. will kill you.."

Misty(hugging Ash) : "Ash,please,anger and dissent creates more of that only..please,calm down we'll talk it out don't bother.."

Ash(solemn) : "yeah..first night and.."

Misty(solemn) : "you were too harsh to them you know.."

Ash(scoff, shivering voice) : "i'm sorry Mist,but let them do whatever they can

i'm packing up in 5 weeks from the Lab..i was the one who told Trace to keep up,he found Daisy,told Gary not to mingle with me and your personal problems got Lillie,swared Brock off out of his lunacy and then he got Violet..and all i got was a f.. b.. who went to check on me.."

Misty(hugging Ash,tears, stern Voice,shiver) : "hey,you've me and wanna make

me cry on.."

Ash(solemn,hugging Misty) : "it's alright Mist,i'll talk,but don't bother about those f.."

Misty(Frown) : "Ash they're our family.we can't stay like this forever"

Ash(irritated) : Had mom not been there you could've spoken,who told my mom.."

Misty(solemn) : "whoever Ash, doesn't matter you should go there now.."

Ash(solemn) : "Ah! first night together after so many years and.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash!"

Ash(solemn) : "All right Mist,you have a nice sleep ok(hugging Misty)"(release Ganger)"Pikachu stay,here's Nivy Mist,keep him for emergencies he knows this place extremely well,Pikachu will do the introductions and tell him not to worry about me.."

Misty(solemn) : "you can stay out all night,i'm going tomorrow at 9,i want to see smiles,got me Ash?"

Ash : "Crystal,lets go Ganger.."

...(back at Lab)...

Daisy at first...

Daisy(frown) : "why are you Back Ketchum"

Ash : "Daisy,please would you care to let me speak?"

Daisy(scowl) : "go on but it's 12:30"

Ash : "um..just was getting the memories refreshed..sorry..but,i'm here to know whether you're alright with Mist's choice?"

Daisy(scowl): "that's why you came? Ketchum..you.."

Ash(solemn) : "your past is past Daisy,you know i know that extremely well and besides neither you nor Lillie nor Violet were ever not what they're shown to be,you truly still are extremely good with your battles and performances,you always had my respect and.."

Daisy(solemn) : "Ketchum,enough,in front of everyone you.."

Ash : "alright may i speak then since Mist would tell you anyway.."

Daisy : "yeah that's what i want too,spit it out,why are you with my baby Mist and what did you mean with my..(tears)"

Ash : "Calm down Daisy,i needed to know the truth"

Daisy : "what do you mean?Ans.."

Ash : "i'm answering,just stay calm.i can't stay separated from Misty and neither can she,so we're back and Marrying very soon,as long as you and Trace,hey why don't you call him here as well?"

Daisy : "he won't till i'm satisfied"

Ash : "Daisy,you know well of my position now..my sources gave me the news last morning of coming parenthood for you

two,i couldn't have been happier and besides your my sister in law by both sides,you know i didn't mean those,or if you doubt,please forgive me but i'm honest i really wasn't right then..."

Daisy : "what was the truth?"

Ash : "umm.Daisy please Mist will tell.."

Daisy(scream) : "i want it from you."

Ash(sigh) : "Alright,calm down..please..i'm saying..please calm down..i had to know how much Mist can bear with me,upto which level,and you can see the result,can you please let it go?"

Daisy(tears,sobbing) : "you threatened her to be with you and your bragging,Ketchum?you b.."

Ash(sigh) : "Daisy,do you like Trace as much as you do with someone else?"

Daisy(shout,tears) : "you b..,what are you pointing.."

Ash(solemn) : "you'll remain with Tracy as long and as much Mist did to me,you will walk with him all the way."

Daisy(sobbing) : "do you doubt that Ketchum?"

Ash(sigh) : "no i don't but if you weren't sure whether he will as well what would you do?"

Daisy(scowl,sobbing,tears) : "Ketchum,you're crossing.."

Ash(solemn) : "exactly my point,you'll see you much he can bear with you,i did the same with Mist,if i'm lying shoot me later,i'll be happy,now please,go it's pretty late.."

Daisy(sobbing) : "Ketchum,Trace told me about that prescription you gave,my baby..(crying and sobbing).."

Ash(solemn) : "that's my point,whether you all like me or not she's not getting healed by any other means.."

(Tracy comes out,shivering)

Tracy(shivering voice) : "Ash,i..."

Ash(solemn) : "Trace,please,my head wasn't at the right place for 4 years and today was the climax.."

Daisy(frown) : "he has explained himself to me Tracy, let's leave him,Ketchum you return home ok, don't cheat on her the very first night saying you stayed here for too long,'night,come on Trace"

(Tracy and Daisy Leave)

Ash(self) : "one down two to go,Ganger"

...(Gary)

Gary(solemn) : "Ash! you know who i was,you've just gone lower!"

Ash(solemn) : "why Gary,because i said at that juncture of my life something to you and Lillie in madness and you were pretty confident I won't cheat on Misty even yesterday?"

Gary(solemn) : "Ash, your only harming yourself you see,your head has spun with all these,i would've not minded at all had you not brought up that shared child thing..you know i told you first.."

Ash : "exactly Gary, you've been my closest and the only link with my childhood and all in these 4 years,but to be honest with you,you see,you'll go with Lillie to the end and viseversa but you'll be with me just till that moment,and still you're talking with me is proof enough that what priceless jewel Lillie has.."

Gary(hugging Ash,shivering voice) : "sorry i doubted you that moment buddy i get you,Mist is special to you and you needed the assurance,i get you,and i surely know that in these many years how special she is, don't make her cry again,ok?"

Ash(hugging Gary) : "yes thanks buddy,no she won't cry but special are all of you-Lillie and you as well Gary,thanks for being patient with me.."

Gary(solemn) : "Lil's inside,still can't get over what you said..just go and meet.."

Ash : "she'll be fine,i promise buddy"

(Inside)

Lillie(crying,scream) : "you b.."

Ash : "Please Lillie,don't torture the little one,i know what you are to Gary and viseversa, don't bother about a bonehead like me,please stay calm,please"

Lillie(sobbing) : "you left Mist in a place i wish i could throw you in right now,i've never been hurting inside like today due to you Ketchum and you had to bring up the darkest day of my life.."

Ash(solemn) : "please Lillie,it was a moment of madness,i know how Gary has been since he decided to follow his grandpa's footsteps and what you two mean to each other..please i'm happy for both of you and the future..."

Lillie(sobbing) : "i doubt you Ketchum,whether you truly want Mist or not..she couldn't see any light the day you left her for road.. s.."

Ash(solemn) : "and in unbearable confusion she was suddenly encroaching the one she helped become responsible,yes please Lillie,Misty told me,please it's long past forget that i ever said it"

Lillie(crying) : "so you know, you've trodden the very core of my life,Gary,i can't be.."

Ash : "you two are soulmates and that's enough..and no,you don't have to be without your soulmate,ever,but unless you calm down,the whole family's future will only stress Gary,please i beg of you,calm down,take rest.."

Lillie(sobbing) : "what assurance have you given Mist and have you spoken with Dase?"

Ash(solemn) : "Mist has me for assurance and Daisy..yes i've spoken with her"

Lillie(sobbing) : "you also hurt grandpa like.."

Ash : "i'm going now,Daisy didn't allow me then have to sneak in..but please you please don't jeopardize the future because of me,it doesn't serve any purpose,please Lillie,your my Sister in law as well, don't do this,i beg of you from the whole family's point of view,you'll have the eldest and first..please if not me mercy Gary and your future..please"

Lillie(sobbing) : "get out Ketchum"

Ash : "yes,but i promised Gary you'll be fine after i leave, don't let him down,best wishes.."

...(outside)..

Ash : "sorry buddy,but i guess she's a bit better now,just attend her"

Gary(concerned) : "yeah i'll handle her,but Ash,that prescription Trace barely could say much except that it's ().."

Ash(solemn) : "3 months,Gary you know me i'm a b.. and that's why i could accuse you of all for not confronting Lillie that day cause you were the one may be on that very moment told me about the future..(shivering)..as soon as Daisy left,Mist being Mist went a step further and you understand the rest,i broke into her room as you know then saw those went to Safforn and today first thing after patch up went to () in Safforn again..Mist was doing those and all i did was to be a b..(chokes)"

Gary(hugging and patting Ash) : "it's alright buddy,it's alright..and about your legal procedures,i'm here you don't need to worry about that..and don't kill yourself to just see whether Misty too follow others or you as you know the result..Ash,all will be fine but i've one problem if any..Grandpa.."

Ash(hugging Gary) : "i'm going pal..you just attend Lillie..alright..Ganger"

.....(sneak into Professor Oak's room)

Ash(solemn) : "Professor!"

Oak : "Ash! see i wouldn't mind but the children..."

Ash : "Professor i've got nothing to hide from you,i dug a grave for myself and wanted to see if Misty jumps with me or not..professor you know perfectly well her attitude to me since she first saw me and no matter what she attained later that attitude only equally increased...i understood my grave mistakes but i knew no other way of validating whether she'll jeopardize herself only for her infatuation with me,so.."

Oak(smile) : "enough Ash!enough!enough explanation son,and just forget that we ever had this bit of a problem.."

Ash(tears) : "have you forgiven me Professor?"

Oak(smile) : "Ash,i've known your great Grandpa and played with him when i was a kid,you're same as all in your family and mostly your dad..ever desperate,ever natural ever the Ketchum's,and the Ketchum's and Oak's share a huge history,which you surely don't know in full though you mentioned but i'll tell you later in details.."

Ash(solemn,wipes off tears) : "Thanks Professor,but.."

Oak(hugging Ash) : "it's alright son,and You've made your choice,i know all the four of those sweet little flowers from Gym very very well,i'm so glad you've picked up the one for you,be happy young man,enjoy!"

Ash(smile) : "thanks Again Professor."

Professor Oak : "umm..Ash,just one thing for clarification only,if you allow me.."

Ash(solemn) : "Professor,please if you want my permission i'll find no solace..."

Professor Oak : "um..no Ash,just out of curiosity.."

Ash : "ask whatever you want Professor,you'll get the right answer according

to my knowledge.."

Professor Oak : "thanks,Ash i know you were trash talking there but the student and the staffs, it's true that once I was involved with one of my students just around the time your grandma' came to my life and i also wasn't sure like you.."

Ash(shivering voice) : "Professor I can't forgive myself if you keep hovering over long gone matters like this..it was 51 years ago and was all about 7 months only 2 other people involved except grandma and all came to agreement and still worked together exactly here for the next 4 years..please Professor,the whole world knows who you are and if an egotistical bufoon like me.."

Professor Oak : "no,Ash it's alright.i have buried that exactly those many years ago and as you said it was buried by all then and there including your grandma,but Ash that's my point how did you know.."

Ash(grave) : "Professor, separation from Misty had turned me into a demon and i also busted team rocket and you know they can know these things via channels,i just revisited those last year and just to know their methods more while i was doing the Elite4s..Professor i probably know the secrets of many many people

including my friend's and their families,all only to get back my Mist and i've forgotten most but i'll forget the rest i promise you..(shivering)"

Professor Oak : "Son,i understand your situation perfectly.."

Ash(firmly) : "No Professor, don't doubt,due to me there won't be any black shadows over anyone,the Source was Professor Kirk,and as i actually got him may be a month before he died.."

Professor Oak(solemn) : "i see.."

Ash(solemn) : "Professor,i did it by means of My Ganger,trash talked him and Ganger just made him uneasy inside his head to speak the truth..i also left a note detailing my actions as much as i thought was right without any particular mentions of name or place or time or anything like that..his son contacted me after his death,he

came to agreement with this fact and didn't have any resentment for me rather was happy that before his time was up i rather helped him to be all happy in the last moment as well if he ever had a problem to begin with that is...

that's all that i have as an atonement,you know my level and what Ganger can do,Sabrina is an amusing trainer and Gym Leader,and he just got better and better,not everyone can single handedly beat all challengers in Kalos League till Final like he did with such ease and you more than anybody know

Gerninja,Noivern and Ganger,why i always have atleast one of them,why i generally avoid to use them to their maximum capacity..a numbered few among their spesies have ever come up to the level that they're at or may be they're themselves the new benchmarks..and i

suspect they are getting better every moment and you know they can't breed due to their heightened powers,and i don't know why but they just don't bother and take me as they themselves and won't leave my side by any means despite my own actions to them,all of my bunch has given their lives for me and just so happy and content with this fact and you know Butterfree and may be this his 13th generation or so..still comes back here..(sobs)..Professor i'm sorry if i used them to.."

Professor Oak(patting Ash,smile) : "Ash i know your bunch,what powers they pocess,they're pokemons yet they show such

strange and heightened intelligence,i know their sacrifices and mostly i get ashtonished by their carefree nature and joy that you're beside them only that is enough for them..Ash,i know pokemons,unless the trainer is extremely honest with himself they won't show this character ever....they are an once only bunch just like their trainer..but now you're opening up,i am being rude to you now but now you can understand my own

curiosity more..so"

Ash(smile,tears) : "Thanks professor and please,you just question me all you want"

Professor Oak(smile) : "Pikachu won against all 8 Pokemons being you very last pokemon in Sinnoh,did he reach that self heal level before or just during the match and you found out?you know currently no other Pikachus are at that level the last having passed away 10 years back and she was with Katy,the just retired Sinnoh Elite 4..and that was 6 years ago..you Pikachu has no match nowhere in history or present.."

Ash : "yeah,she told me about it,she was astonished too at my Sinnoh Victory and said i'll go a long way..i also met Laura,she too blessed me and told me there'll be no match in history or present..but professor my name and fame hasn't helped my personal life a bit and i was foolish enough then to not uproot the poison when it had just set in..but i'm trying now and Misty was step 1..about Pikachu in Sinnoh...I don't know when he reached that,but i observed him for a few days,he just seemed too perceptive,and in that all out situation i somehow could connect with his nerves intricately and he executed all my plans and even signal me what he thought would be better..it was more like a meeting than only me telling him things,and me knowing about self heal,well you know it's a secret but i suspected something with Pikachu and just read about that level,tested it the day before final and then what happened happened...though the pokemon centre people told me not to push him there too

many times else i'll lose him..which i didn't tell them that it was rather he that begged me to be pushed to that level..that was the first taste for me when pokemons themselves would come up with their own plans during battle and none still in my bunch can do it better than him..Professor,this hidden power and intelligence is the cause of his temperament isn't it?"

Professor Oak : "yup,and i later only found it out intuitively after handing him to you,but i couldn't take him back from you,you somehow always enticed me with your sweetness and behaviours with you Pokemons Ash and i can now proudly say you deserved Pikachu more than anybody.."

Ash(blush) : "um..thanks Professor but your words in my current mental state replaces Pikachu.."

Professor Oak(smile) : "son,i congratulate you again for having her and all the trouble was that the marriage you talked about,why this 17 year due eventual didn't take place exactly then(laugh,Ash smiles and blush)..i'm very happy Ash for you and Misty that finally you've come together,but she also has

her Golduck and Gyarados..they are unique.."

Ash : "umm..thanks professor,and yes,she knows about Golduck and certainly can manage him at that level of communication and all but she might have pushed a bit too hard with it

in her now long gone depression and she knows it,Golduck is left at the pokemon centre there and we'll bring him here tomorrow...About Gyarados,you know Mist can get too excited at times and thus she is herself hesitant to push Gyarados to that level in fear of losing her,you know the Gyarados spesis they'll pick up their Masters' hidden rage first hand and first thing and may exhaust itself at the very first go beyond repair,so Mist is hesitant,but we'll manage it, don't worry and you also will get a look at her,Mist just doesn't want to part with her,she just loses it sometimes if she doesn't have Mist beside."

Professors Oak : "enough explanation son,just one more thing,the staffs I guess,Harold right..?"

Ash(solemn) : "yeah well you know recent troubles regarding this lab- where people even in your field are power hungry and ego and greed and all that are trying to jump upon you of all...he

can't forget that and chews it at even this age..not me..my sources..you know my activities from Lance..

Professor Oak(smile) : "Ash,enough said...I know who you are and that's enough for me..it's much late now,sorry for holding you here this long you better go,see you tomorrow son"

Ash(solemn) : "but professor i actually also came to know that all of them knows..."

Professor Oak(smile) : "Dark Night starring Ganger?"

Ash(solemn) : "i told Sabrina that i needed the most powerful one,was a Gastlie but 3 days with me evolves into Ganger...barring my mom i just turned on anyone else and yeah i knew sometimes may be i'll say those cause that was my ultimate point of infighting and had to extract that out from all of them by hypnotism after meeting Professor Kirk..Professor i myself have no idea what level i have but i just don't care and want to know..i never did a thing to sabotage anyone so i had to be sure that day that no staffs were there and they knew it themselves even if they forgot at that moment..nothing went outside and this i wouldn't have allowed anyway..my separation made me insane and thus i did what i did.."

Professor Oak(smile) : "Ash,it's ok..you know me as well..you didn't see your grandma and she was exactly my like..we just joked it aside the day we settled it between ourselves..Gary and Tracy had to face those high authorities and they you know being they did what they're now getting most used to be doing and yeah they know means my two little grand daughters know as well..so yeah they did..you went to Kirk just for the direct confirmation i realize and Ash,that's enough to prove who you are in soul..ever the Ketchums..(patting Ash).."

Ash : "um..thanks for the compliment professor i'm just i can say sorry for that again but with regards to my now reach i'll try to tackle the egos there as well i just wanted my root back.."

Professor Oak " "Ash,i know what you're thinking but please just don't mingle much into it,these rubbishes just going to strain a playfull man like you all the more...they are what they are,Oak Labs will not care for anyone who thinks they have much power..it's alright..but it's much late..just go back,enjoy.."

Ash(smile) : "thanks professor and yes thanks again.."

.....(wakes and calls Tracy Up via Ganger)

Tracy(flustered) : "Ash,i just.."

Ash(shivering) : "it was good you weren't there Trace,i couldn't have ever forgiven myself if i lost you and i would've.."

Tracy : " Ash,i told you i know you for 15 years,what happened,you tell me and that's all.No,i knew that you two had to be together and i just then realized no matter what you said later,you did me the biggest favour..but now..why drag all in?"

Ash : "to know how far she can walk with me? what or Trace..i can't imagine i would.."

Tracy : "i realize Ash,but we'll always be your friends and we may not be Misty but you'll have us right behind"

Ash(hugging Tracy,tears) : "Trace,i've been a moster for 4 years.."

Tracy(hugging Ash,shivering) : "its ok pal,just go back to Misty,she's your only cure and she's waiting"

Ash(tears wipes off,shivering) : "thanks Trace..um..she odered me to put the smiles back no matter what,i've managed all,please you look after Daisy,look after her and if you can spare me.."

Tracy(smile) : "Ash,you already have that and always will.."

Daisy(solemn) : "it's all right Ash..No i heard Tracy going out of the room..followed and listened.have you spoken to Lil?"

Ash : "ya,but look after her ok,She and You,you hold the future now..please i shouldn't have been what i have been for 4 years and there's no pardon for that..but if you can,please spare.."

Daisy(solemn) : "Ash, it's alright but don't torture Misty ever again ok?she just can't be alive without you and you saw that yourself..she'll too happily move according to your finger movements all her life,just don't make her suffer for that"

Ash(solemn) : "Daisy,just like you have Tracy and Lillie has Gary,Misty is in safe hands i give you my words,only better days ahead"

Daisy : "go back ok,and tell her to sleep well,'night"

Ash : "Goodnight Daisy and Tracy you too"

Tracy : "yeah Ash and Pick up the Picture tomorrow afternoon ok?"

Ash : "Tracy,thanks man,thanks,no rush..but i've a question"

Tracy : "what?"

Ash : "the 5 weeks.."

Tracy(laugh) : "your grandsons will plead with me then only i may help to extend that,just return,by-the-way,you spoke with Brock?"

Ash : "thanks for the compliment Trace,and no,i owe him big time,but i'm just too tired today and it won't be nice if i suddenly appear today.."

Tracy : "Ash,i in the mess you created couldn't call Brock or even Cilan..I don't know but,you can go and no Violet won't mind either,they'll be pleased"

Ash(smile and hugging Tracy) : "thanks for the encouragement Trace,may be i should take Mist with me tomorrow morning or may be she already has called him, anyway i'll see him thanks"

Tracy(solemn) : "but finally Ash,that thing you gave.."

Ash(solemn) : "yeah was telling Gary...3 months or so since the day Daisy had that skirmish first with Mist then couldn't keep to herself here and Mist only went overboard with that as you know her character...got them from her room,confirmed at Saffron, today took her there on Charizard first thing after patch up had a dinner came back was sitting when you met us..(smile)..Trace you know the our cures don't you.."

Tracy (smile) : "just Goodnight Ash,don't be late for your double doeses"

Ash(smile) : "night".

.....(meanwhile Misty calls Brock just after Ash has left)...

Brock : "hellow,Misty!How are you?Viol told me,that..

Misty : "Brock,please,nobody knows Ash better than you and i assure you He's that same Ash as ever as you met first..no i'm fine,i 've decided to get engaged to him on my own choices and terms and he didn't force or threaten me to..he himself was torn apart inside may be way more than me myself and i just gave him a chance..please..if you can spare him a thought and yes Viol called me first,you know her,she's on the way home..just keep safe..

Brock(solemn) : "yeah,i'll see Viol..and congratulations Misty but stay safe and keep your eyes open,that's all i'm saying..."

Misty : "thanks Brock,i will and just take care of Viol and don't let her call us,i told you what i had to,Viol will get onto Ash's nerves and you know the rest..Ash was on the verge of lunacy himself just his natural sweetness has kept him sane..please...just take care as soon as we meet we'll do the rest.."

Brock : "yeah,Misty,got you and just take care..'Night"..

.....

Delia(concerned) : "um Misty,Ash.."

Misty : "it's ok mo..um.."

Delia(smile) : "mom.that's all(hugs Misty,Misty blushes and beams).."

Misty(smile) : "thanks mom,yeah,he's out to appolozize to all and told me might be late cause has some issues in the farm and his you know stuffs,he's a sought after man now everywhere especially for covert things.."

Delia(tendering Misty) : "um..yeah,i know but you know as well Mist,that's how his dad went and then all this..i just don't like it..he wasn't home for 4 years always not interested,barely talked about himself even was very harsh and rude to me..so much..but i only hoped that he's ok cause his honesty never left him but today after i got the news via Gary that Ash hasn't behaved well with Professor Oak of all..really i was scared to death.."

Misty : "no mom,it's just that..um..he just never came into terms with our breakup and was always agitated plus all the things he has done..he wasn't just balanced sometimes did get too agitated..but he's well now.."

Delia(smile) : "yeah and now he has my little doll as well(Misty giggles and blushes)...Ash just was hiding his pain from the break-up and only when he came back here 2 weeks back did i realize it..i saw in TV Mist,what he did with you and gym..i just didn't know what has got to him..anyhow,my little doll(smiles at Misty)..you've yourself been in a very difficult situation and mental state..how are you now?"

Misty(smile) : "i'm ok mom..i just never came to agreement with that break up either and then the Gym and show and all that..i just was severely depressed but now i'm ok..Ash himself cured me..and all"

Delia(smile) : "i'm so happy to have you back Mist as well,i just couldn't believe myself then either..but only good days are ahead now..but(smile)..where did he take you?"

Misty(blush,smile) : "um..Saffron...on his Charizard..it..um..it was good..(blushes).."

Delia(smile) : "i see,that's just the beginning(Misty blushes and smiles)...anyhow Mist,you must be tired now and you do look very much so...lets go prepare the beds..he'll be late i've realized just come on and have something..by-the-way Mist,you're in the Hall of Fame too i heard.."

.....(Ash returns,12:30 AM)...

Ash : "Ah!food,food,the brats at restaurant always cheats(Misty and Delia laughs)..Mime have you eaten my food up as well?"

Mr Mime : <you're too late>

Ash(trying to wrestle Mr Mime) : "i show you..you cl.."

Delia(frown,Misty laughs) : "Ash leave her alone"

Ash(frown,whinnying) : "she always eats my foods,mess my things up,doesn't open the door quickly when i come back,conspire with my bunch to sabotage my sleep(both Delia and Misty bursts into laughter)...Mime,i'm your actual master,you know that"

Mime : <you caught me,mom brought me up>

Ash : "and she taught you this?i'll show you,you..Gengar,Gerninja,Pikachu"

(Delia and Misty bursts into laughter)

(all joins Mime)

Ash : "so i'm the devil's favourite villain then universally accepted? really Ash Ketchum,your luck has turned"

(after Ash goes to change and refresh)

Delia(smile) : "Pokemon Master or alleged Playboy,with his pokemon ever the little baby,that nature is his true self, that's my real Ash and that hasn't been remotely tainted,i'm overjoyed"

Misty(smile) : "yes mom,he's true nature indeed is exactly like that,and he shall be like that always"

Delia(smile) : "seeing my Ash with his pokemons, it's just the most beautiful thing and now i've got you as the crown jewel on top,Little doll"

Misty(blush) : "thanks mom,i'm all too happy".

Delia Ketchum(smile,hugging Misty) : "Mist,i'm so happy to have you two back,Ash hasn't been home the last 4 years,always bit unmindful,i'm so happy to have him back to his own self as is Mimey and we all have you,really it's so wonderful"

Misty(smile,hugging Delia) : "mom,only better days ahead it will be,and i'm ecstatic myself that i'm officially now part of the Ketchum Family"

Delia : "you know with all these i just feared i lost Ash because simply that he

created a grave trouble at the Lab,i just couldn't believe myself and despite all what i heard and his elusiveness,today i really was scared that i've lost Ash.."

Misty(smile) : "mom,he's been a bit stressed,that's all,he needs rest and closure and he's getting that, don't worry"

Delia(smile) : "no i don't,now that you're with us as well,i absolutely don't"

Misty(smile) : "thanks Mom"...

..(night at room)...

Ash(relief) : "Ah,finally i get to.."

Misty(smirk) : "not so fast dear.."

Ash(frown) : "what?i cant fondle my flower all i want?(Misty brusts into laughter)"

Misty(smile) : "i want the few things you promised me.."

Ash(frown) : "blackmailing hey,anyhow Order Please(smile)"

Misty(smile) : "i may want to revive the Sensational Sisters"

Ash(grim) : "the gym itself isn't enough?"

Misty(laugh) : "not as you're looking after it"

Ash(scowl) : "never in my infinite lives will i.."

Misty(laugh) : "bear with random strangers and appease them with badges even if they're not good enough?"

Ash(disappointed) : "hey,i always atleast put up a fight..and i was well mannered and i was.."

Misty(smiling,cajoling Ash's cheeks) : "Ash Ketchum,Pokemon Master,Hall of Fame all of his own.why don't you want me back to the shows then?"

Ash(grim) : "if only i'm allowed to manage you,then i may consider it"

Misty(smile) : "that means.."

Ash(irritated) : "none gets to interview you,no autographs,no photoes,no publicity,no travel,inside the gym only,brief shows,high ticket price,limited seats.."

Misty(brusts into laughter) : "men not allowed?"

Ash(frown) : "exactly and neither unmarried women,only those with children allowed that too only girl child upto 8 years"

Misty(laughing) : "and you expect the business to run beyond the first show?"

Ash(irritated) : "i don't care,in the gym none can look at my flower except ME(Misty brusts into laughter,Ash also laughs and hugs Misty firmly)...hum..my flower is all mine and that's it..i'll adore my flower,fondle my flower,cherish my flower,nourish my flower all 24/7 in the gym..(Misty brusts into laughter)..(frown)..why what's wrong?(whinnying)i want my flower all the time that's all.."

Misty(smirk,hugging Ash firmly) : "sweetness turns bitter if tasted too much"(brusts into laughter,Ash scowls and frowns and tenders Misty's cheeks and hair)..who said that sweetie(laugh)..?"

Ash(irritated) : "no,whoever said,my flower is eternally sweet(Misty laughs)..(frown,angry)..why don't those h.. b.. just.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash! what is it with you dear,you never used to say these things no matter what."

Ash(disappointed) : "na long separation(hugging Misty),Mist just don't leave me for even a day"

Misty(hugging Ash) : "Ash you don't have to be so cruel on the fans,we had to abruptly closed it down and i just want to relax and enjoy"

Ash : "it's not about them Mist,I don't want to see you overworking and have a schedule that engages you so much that i can't spend time with you,yes i've travelled all over the world leaving you behind like a f..(Misty frowns)..whatever..i left you here and went to utter selfishness and i regret that,but i don't demand much,atleast for the next two weeks in Orange.."

Misty : "Ash,the past is past,please you said it yourself.and no I won't

overwork and i don't want you to be away from me for a moment now as well, but it's just that you know, i like to be engaged and energetic always. that's all"

Ash : "yes Mist, but you know i'm just a bit tired and just want to be with you which i've never been able to for so many years in fact since Jhoto, it's just been 12 years that i've passed more than 15 days together with you, and i just want to rest and be with you all the time like your shadow.. (Misty giggles and tenders Ash's cheeks.."

Misty(smiling) : "you're doing exactly that Ash, don't worry, but.."

Ash(grim) : "what is it Mist? i know what you had to go through.."

Misty(hugging Ash) : "no, nothing about that, Ash that we're done with, never bring that up again, promise me?"

Ash(hugging Misty, smiling) : "it's just DONE."

Misty(smiling) : "right. but you know you've taken a huge toll yourself and mom confirmed that, i just want to polish every little strain off from my diamond.."

Ash(smile) : "say what you were saying"

Misty : "i wanted to know how many feathers you've ruffled to get to me and that has left you so torn apart inside.. No, take your months, but just that among out close friends, this much would do for me now."

Ash(bit disappointed) : "um.. ya, we have to tell each other some huge novels but well about close friends, see i just switched my contacts and smiles off from some people that did it, rest i didn't bother, Cilan and Iris did take a bit of a shock but that's only as they were in Unova and Cilan, ya i did ruffle that feather but he went to Sinnoh Elite4 and sort of wanted a few things that i also wanted.. we're being professional very much now so it's ok.. Iris totally off.. Cilan has been very professional since then with me and we do have some contact.. Brock, Trace.. well i've already patched up with Trace.. and no none else, Dawn, Iris, Clemont, Max it was all about the contacts and you've seen Serena, who i've got no contacts with just calls Professor Oak sometimes and that's it.. May, well that's for another day"

Misty(scowl) : "you didn't ever spare your little sis too?"

Ash(dissatisfied) : "um.. no but not as much as you're thinking, i just mouthed her off on her 1st anniversary as it was the day after Serena fiasco and that hi! big bro!.. that sound just made me mad.. i'm only sorry but i didn't care.. besides i heard she did keep contacts with you.."

Misty : "yes she did, Ash, you have to get rid of these habits if you already haven't-if you can by your dark pokemons make people a bit psychologically vulnerable then can push it by trash talking, you can hypnotize people and know their secrets and you also can create similar figures to fool people and pokemon and most importantly i suspect you being a pokemon trainer all your life can hold sway over just about any pokemon as well as create multiple instances of your pokemons and use them according to your will. Ash, i've seen Noivern well and i myself have Golduck as you've seen him yourself, i know very well what you've been up to, i just tried my hands at this as well but just not upon everyone.."

Ash(dissatisfied, hugging Misty firmly) : "Mist i'm sorry but you still have no idea what i actually can do as i myself don't... you can hold sway over water pokemons at will but not on many as you're not of my temperament.. the trash talking requires dark gang to throw upon me just what they're holding onto.. about those illusions i just never bothered but i surely can and i'm completely immune from those... i can hold sway over anyone unless they are very devoted to their master and their masters themselves are like you but the relationship must be special.. like i can't hold sway over Dwegong cause he's gym leading pokemon and he will never budge.. etc.. i never bothered about my powers it is always about fun and that's me till this body falls... you can do multiple instance

creation and tried your hand at mind reading but was so depressed you just couldn't progress..and please Mist,i'm telling you never try exactly that..that's the path to hell..i'll not be able to get my sweet flower back from there if she pushes too hard and can't be sane..separation from body is as you know the ghosts did to me very first day at Saffron and yeah Gengar does that at will and i can do it too..but i won't go to see whoose in bed with who..um..sorry..but that's not the case..i just don't care about those namecalled(Misty laughs) powers at all they make no sense cause they're absolutely insignificant to my trash talking and all that..i'm totally immune as i carry myself like that and all...i just want to be souled with my bunch and they do what they do it's funs and games..and my sweet flower should never get mingled with f.. psychic powers cause a h.. b.. like me.."

Misty(frown,scowl) : "Ash,just shut up,i'm your wife"

Ash(whinnying,hugging Misty firmly) : "no my sweet flower should only play around with me and pokemons and gym battle if she wants..those..anyway,please Mist,never push yourself too much...if it comes naturally all fine...just don't try to get them that's all i never did and i know i would've been just dishonest with myself and my pokemons and i probably have every bit of those powers but they're just a trap like a mirage..once one is in,that's it..my sweet flower can get a little angry as i know her and those dumb bufoons will pester her for badges..but don't harm yourself

Mist,please..i'll take care of anyone that you want..and you don't need to discuss anything you attain with me unless you feel so cause i'm no authority it's so natural to me and i'll know your states naturally..but i don't want to hear those nasty things that'll harm my flower...i just have them and don't care a fig,that's all..but my sweetie is the once only any pokemon type gym leader and will be exactly like me and better if she's already not cause i tortured her(Misty frowns)..anyway,i'm so happy for my sweet sweet Mist flower in anything...Mist,you just be yourself which is sweet sweet Mist(tendering Misty's cheeks)..ok,promise?"

Misty(smile,hugging Ash,tendering his cheeks and hair) : "right,i got you and it's a promise.but anything else you want to say about your adventures with some illegal gadgets,the illegal bit?"

Ash(smile) : "how i transmitted that chorus to everyone in such a big gym with varied pokemons? no that i um.. kinda managed from the Professor Kukui's Lab,Professor Oak knows it, it's alright(hugging Misty)Mist,i need you to heal myself,please st.."

Misty(hugging and cajoling Ash) : "Ash, you've got me all the time and you know it.enough answers dear we should now give it a rest"

Ash : "yeah,but now you've got me going,i tell you the main things"

Misty(smile) : "take your time Ash."

Ash(smile) : "why,can't i just keep gazing at you a bit longer?i've never had the opportunity since.."

Misty(smirk) : "gazing,hum?long lost habit,but carry on,i want the same,though i had ample time to do that"

Ash(smile) : "that's at best exclusive recordings of events,"

Misty(smile,cajoling Ash's cheeks) : "right.but Ash,you truly are a living legend once only..you're just so much attuned with any pokemons..."

Ash(smile) : "i'm all my flower..(hugging Misty very firmly)...as you said Mist..'just you'.."

Misty(smile,hugging Ash,patting his back) : "right my bee i'll also fondle you all the time...but what about team rocket and all their stuffs..?"

Ash : "yeah this is one,team rocket obviously used some restricted stones and evolution methods,those i know and their gadgets to hold control over pokemons,i can only do upto which my 3 buddies like to and they decide the theme and it's always about fun,they never hurt any pokemons and i just stand there and play with them don't do anything else.."

Misty : "yeah right.but Ash that's a legal move in battles why have they made it illegal?"

Ash : "um..right it's only legal upto a certain level as well for the trainer and

they are checked before whether they've crossed it or not, me and my bunch rather now never can use it in battle as we've long crossed that level and it's a disadvantage rather though many of my pokemons are psychologically supreme so rather immune to it from others but still..besides Ganger never crossed the level that day in Kalos though if i pushed him he would've easily done that, you see Mist, this is what i'm telling you, they check you pokemon and you, they still won't know what you actually can do, it's a fine line, you've i guess got a glimpse of my calmness over my nerves and sudden outbursts- i myself had to prepare myself like this to hold the strain, i was in constant search to be attuned to my pokmons so that i know every bit of them..and from my level it's just all too easy, but fortunately i've been born as i'm, I can't do illegal things, at my level they shouldn't have allowed me in Kalos i guess, cause i already had reached the Hall of Fame's top most level in terms of Mastery over Pokemons, but i just wanted to be distracted so i still formally competed and yeah i know who i'm..that's i'm just my flower(Misty giggles)..but these dumb bufoons think Ash Ketchum is and once only pest and that's why they're so desperate so get me into the hall of fame so that they can put a leash on me to make sure i don't create another team rocket, you by now might've guessed i should've used my powers before then those two s..(Misty Frowns) incidents wouldn't have happened for which i now always have regrets, but really i can't be suspicious all the time, i'll go absolutely mad and i..."

Misty(smile) : "enough Ash, i wasn't a saint myself with regard to this attunement either, i could do many things with Golduck and i did but what you've done is exactly the opposite of my path, though we both wanted the same thing and was doing the same thing just in different forms to get to the same goal- i wanted a completely thoughtless state with regards to people and forget you, you wanted a complete thoughtfull state with regard to people and be with me all time, basically i saw Ash in all and tried to erase him, you wanted to see Misty in them and tried to erase them..i never got my Ash removed, you never found your Misty either. I'm so happy that you got your breakthrough and we both were lifted from our agony(hugging Ash)really dear, one soul one body"

Ash(hugging Misty, tears) : "precisely. but Mist, i never did anything to harm anyone or get any unfair advantage and i did trick a few but that's only to extract some informations which never would harm them and if possible i explained myself to them, and just forget everyone...as i said i just never care i want to have fun and if possible help every being in the world..i don't know what my powers are neither do i ever want to..i just want to play around with my pokemons and all being in total...Mist, i'm killing myself that i could say those words to you..Mist, i'm so sorry..i called you names..just know apart from you and mom that's exactly my worldview if they pester me..you're you and that's me...but(suddenly lets go Misty off the hug as if remember something some pungent memory)..um.. Misty..i..i never tried anything on you..Misty, if you think you...(choking, lets go off Misty)"

Misty(hugging Ash back) : "Ash, i know that more than anyone else, nobody can hurt another as much as you did by trash talking with any pokemons, no matter how legendary to make one weak and then just trash talk- you in fact never made people weak rather made them happy with the antics that your pokemons did i guess- Ash i know you, you're not an evil monster no matter how much you try to project yourself to be at times..you showed me my soul and my soulmate..that's what my soulmate you could do..please, calm down..i'm only you.."

Ash(shivering, breaking the hug) : "but still Misty, i might've cheat..."

Misty(tears) : "hey wanna make me cry again?"

Ash(flustered and concerned,sorry) : "no..um..Misty,no please..but.."

Misty(shuddering,tears) : "your wife demands you take her up in your arms immediately,N.."

Ash(hugging Misty,but just about lightly) : "Misty,i must.."

Misty(firmly hugging Ash,tears) : "that's not your wife's name and you must hug your wife like your wife..don't dare to try any stunts..."

Ash(hugging Misty very firmly and smiling,wipes off her tears) : "thanks Mist..i'm sorry if.."

Misty (hugging Ash very firmly and smile) : "Ash,i was talking about hurt because many can may be

make me happier than you ever would but nobody could ever hurt me like that

and still trust or why trust but absolutely KNOW that even if he killed me,i'll still resurrect and run back to him again and again-that's what you are and i'm ever yours because you hurt me the most only to see my trust in you.Ash,this only i can do to myself in the most.

desperate moods or may be not even then cause i want my soulmate all the time you and like you,you said yourself didn't you?"

Ash(sobbing) : "i'm living my life,i'm what i'm and i exist,if i don't see that in another then i know we're separate"

Misty(hugging Ash) : "right Ash,someone thats not me isn't mine either,and your not that so your mine.I've only had this feeling inside,none ever could extract it except you"

Ash : "similarity applies"

Misty : "Ash even if you did enact that feeling in me artificially is it actually cheating or highest form of honesty?you wanted truth,hard truth that's

all,even if i say these in trance,you see it won't make any sense cause more than anybody you'll know i'm lying and Ash,i myself know these this can't be achieved by deceit but by an honesty that a being is capable doing to own self

only..the feeling we have had..Ash,thats words can't describe what to speak of deceit?..absolutely none can have those..none would except two

persons with similar souls and that just can't be by any outside help..it's not describeable and so anything falls..it's whatt it is.Please stop crying,i've got only myself for you and as you and you what i mean"

Ash(crying) : "Mist,i knew the only way to know your true devotion for me was to drag you through every hell unimaginable and see whether you let yourself be dragged and still be mine,Mist,i said i can kill you right now,i can't kill your devotion to me,you'll still continue it no matter how,and i know that you know exactly the same.."

Misty(hugging Ash) : "right you're Ash,i'll have you with me as long as i have myself."

Ash(hugging Misty) : "forever and ever i'll be yours even if i just kill you now"

Misty : "i know this from my very own soul that you're being me just right now"

Ash : "i'll send you to heaven staying at hell and hell will be heaven for me now"

Misty : "from my heaven i'll drop you to hell to feel the pain of hell from now"

Ash : "i'll never be able to make you happy cause we're born in different bodies now"

Misty : "i'll ever be a pain unto you cause my body is different from what you've right now"

Ash : "i'm free from each perceptions except for you as i'm you now.."

Misty : "bondage or freedom always with you as you're just me this right now"

Ash : "born to reflect me am i born as a being that you're right now"

Misty : "born as separate,only to forget,i'm not being what you're right now"

Ash(smile,hugging Misty) : "thanks Misty"

Misty(smile hugging Ash) : "Ketchum."

.....(7/8 minutes later)....

Misty : "what about the legendary pokemons and their stuff?"

Ash : "nah those f..um..excuse me really i need to check my language"

Misty(concerned) : "you sure do,when irritated you always were hot tampered but now its just nasty"

Ash(grim) : "um..right sorry for that,anyhow, legendary pokemons not a big deal you know its just that you can't tame them at all so better leave them"

Misty : "yeah,i just wanted to know whether team rocket had some success on this one or not"

Ash(smile) : "na,none can the anatomy wont allow,they succeed in catching a Arceus but with the Mewtwo they had before it just became difficult to maintain peace so they had to kill both and then they analyzed the anatomy and all that,just that it's not possible yet and even if it is,these kind of pokemons evolves too and mutates themselves too quickly, it's better to leave them alone,they never bit anybody back so why bother,we already have enough unknowns even in a Raticate,which you need more as your trainee pokemon then why bother about the legendaries? besides very few pokemons

anyhow can reach big levels and then even if all do,utter bufoons that pestered you for badges(Misty laughs) can't handle even a Metapod(laugh,Misty bursts into laughter)..yeah like me(both bursts into laughter)...otherwise everyone would've become pokemon masters and self destruct.team rocket couldn't come to terms with their own success which was a failure in their interpretation and it was and that's why they were team rocket and not Oak Lab..and so they self destructed i just carried the fire to the heystack,they themselves got destroyed as they couldn't handle the truth"

Misty : "and those 3?"

Ash(smile) : "um.. surprisingly they're rather close to me now and could've mingled with you the moment Mewoth came to know that i don't have much contacts with you-yeah they did just ask me how are my travel companions as just a courtesy and i just said so so but this exactly turned that little talking pest on,i don't

know what he understood,you know he is so uniquely evolved but i thought he just guessed something and yeah James and Jesse never minded my answer nor were they interested but i don't know what happened to this brat..he straight goes to Pikachu and pleads with him to talk about you..i don't know what Pikachu himself realized except that we don't talk anymore at all..he probably said the same and Meowth was up in arms with anybody that would have a liking

for me and told James and Jesse who then were puzzled as well saying we two were always so close but they thought it might've been an infatuation as after jhoto they ever saw us together twice in mount moon 2 and when my sweetie put her legendary Gyarados out(tenders Misty's cheeks,Misty laughs)...but then Meowth scratches a poor girl who was staring at me just as admiration as my name was big then(both bursts into laughter)..thankully that wasn't the courtroom(both laughs)...then James and Jesse got puzzled as well as me and Mewoth scoffs us that the brat didn't have good intentions(both bursts into laughter)..to which i frown to him that what is it after the skirmish is brushed aside as a Mew0th rush(all bursts into laughter)..then he tells us that i don't talk with my girlfriend anymore,which startled me that how can he guess that while a human being can't.."

Misty(wonder) : "really Ash,that's something amusing..just wow!.."

Ash : "yeah absolutely,anyhow then we all press him to which he says all the female brats(Misty laughs)..um..and my sweetie(smile,Misty bursts into laughter)..no i actually was saying his language(both laugh)..its twerptee(laugh,Misty bursts into laughter)...that ever travelled with me had the most chance cause i never stayed at home for long and you stayed with me longest and those two many times told him we were couples(smiles and tenders Misty,Misty giggles)..so he asks only about you to Pikachu..."

Misty(laugh) : "Mewothictive..(both laughs).."

Ash(laugh) : "exactly,and this girlfriend idea was instilled by the two and thus to Mewoth anybody that stays together like travel companion must be either a couple or sworn in enemies(both laughs)..so he tries to scratch me unless i tell my girlfriend's name(both laugh)..i calm him down but by them James and Jesse got it and went like why you left?why i don't speak to you?why you never joined me again my travels and so on..then they also forces me and say unless i tell them in their gratitude speech they'll mention i'm getting married soon and will be their future's godfather(both brusts into laughter)..so you know what was at stake and i said all right i had a girlfriend and they know her..i say this cause i couldn't fool them of all as they knew my attitude towards girls when i was undercover in many very difficult situation..but i've broken up long ago,then wisdom dawns upon them that indeed it was you as they remember my behaviour with you and others(both laugh)..so they say it was you wasn't it..i then have to say yes cause otherwise they might've directly dragged you in as they knew to some extent your name and all and they knew my position so it becomes a publicity stunt..oh,by-the-way they also say before this that it has to be you cause they never liked the other 3 that they knew as they were according to them too dumb to understand me(both laugh)..their gratitude for me is that i was their biggest enemy for 13 years or so and i was the one who saved them in team rocket then in many court cases cause i knew how much help they did and they truely had changed and all my comrads in the operation confirmed that and also they did me the biggest favour when they themselves confessed how i helped them in court when some tried to defame me and take away my pokemons except Pikachu trophies and licenses and Sinnoh Elite 4 only knew about the operation and Lance,other's didn't like it and so they were playing their dirty tricks saying i have ulterior motives which is still there till i get into the hall of fame..well all the heads are ever with me but it's about the lower authorities which is a trouble everywhere and mostly in Kanto itself,just ever power hungry..anyhow,as soon as i say that yes they're right,the two would make a face like it's saying i'm dead right now and Meowth was going to do something about it all times(Misty laughs) so,i had to plead them from not disturbing you and the 3/4 times we

met in Kalos as the case was still going on,Serena was in ultimate danger..(laugh)..they just couldn't believe that it was possible that we could break up..they are really the biggest friends i guess(smile).."

Misty(smiles) : "enemies know you more than friends(both smile)..and so,they ultimately did help(both laugh)..(frown)but this language is there's ain't it?"

Ash(grin) : "yeah the undercover stuff in whole..you bet,but nah!those two settled down together in () in Unova and all

happy,Mewoth certainly attracted attention,but i'm happy they let the poor thing be with James and Jesse.sometimes you just don't have to go overboard cause you think you can but if you think again,you'll see it's just totally meangless.."

Misty : "but can other pokemons too talk?"

Ash : "none except Mewoth no according to current knowledge and there's only ever been one such Mewoth

before which passed away 162 years back,they heard it and all and tried the experiment for Mewoth but for them their success was their failure. our Mewoth is rather an accident than a success,the group of

researcher Team Rocket had though was top class,i just hope all goes well."

Misty : "tell me about Jesse and James, they're married?"

Ash(smile) : "they had to just like us didn't they(Misty giggles,smile)?15 years of partnership since the age of 15,huge deal.when i said no,we've broken up,they just couldn't believe themselves and said that was like saying i'm dead right now..laugh.i just can't forget the reaction so repeating..they were my longest travel companions you know,from 12,just

knows everything about me."

Misty(smile) : "yeah,as its said, enemies know you way better than friends"

Ash(smile) : "they were the reason why could bust the group,well i told you about the fire,it was just James' jealousy for Butch over Jesse that got me in and they had had other problems,so busted..and infact James himself contacted me with other people and all suddenly conscience..very good family both you know that..just got mad at that age..James told them about me cause he only trusted me...well obviously(both laugh)..and then just Sinnoh Elite4 got it and all that..(laugh)..did they ever pester you since the mount moon 2?"

Misty : "no never,that's the last time i've seen then even..(concerned)but Ash,you were in danger as well and more so i guess after busting and still are.."

Ash (smile) : "they may kidnap me and ask for ransom?relax Mist,i'm not exactly a child anymore,i know many opposing groups and can immediately start an infighting that'll be not exactly pleasing so they can't risk abducting me or any of my friends,and i have to really give that list to you it's huge,they can't do much as long as they can't mitigate my threat...plus you know you must have heard on a ground type surface my legendary water pests(Misty brusts into laughter) against all electric and dragon types and so many more all were type advantage and all swollen up illegally and it wasn't a legal battle itself all sorts of intrusions but these two on the verge of sure death just fooled around as if it's a play and the high boss got so bewildered he told me,that i was a big deal and jovially said if those two so common pokemons can do that,i give up and i'm happy..in the end things ended in a rather pretty happy note.."

Misty(smile,tendering Ash's cheeks) : "and all that's cause my sweet little bee was there.(Ash giggles).(bit concerned) Ash,but still.."

Ash(hugging Misty) : "i've just got my biggest strength back(smile)"

Misty(smile and hug Ash) : "really,alls well that ends well."

Ash : "right,but i want a date with you, desperately,actually camping.."

Misty(smile) : "Viridian Forest Lake, Pinkenberry Islands,Maiden's Peak or Safforn?"

Ash(smile) : "Pinken Islands,we're leaving 7 hours later,No i don't want to listen.."

Misty(laugh) : "please Ash,don't rush like that.we'll have all the time."

Ash(dissapointed) : "no i settled it with them,all of them"

Misty : "ya,i know about all but my sisters"

Ash : "well both have been okay,Lillie a bit too shocked naturally,but others fine,even Daisy was much better the second time"

Misty : "Lillie,i really feel bad for her,we're going there tomorrow morning the first thing again as i've told her,then we go to Lab,then we go to the farming places and cancel or review your stupid ideas there,then you go to Brock come back and we start to phone may be 100 people one by one.. that's your schedule tomorrow and contact me tomorrow night for the next(smirk)"

Ash(scowl) : "what?no time with my sweet little wife on the very first day?"

Misty(smirk) : "sorry?"

Ash(hugging Misty,smile) : "i'll run away with you to Pinkenberry first thing in the morning"

Misty(smile) : "all in good times dear,remember your promises and the premises,who's advice who will obey at any cost(smirk)?"

Ash(smile) : " 'gotcha,but no we'll have to go to Lillie and Gary first indeed"

Misty : "surely,you know she and i,as much we fought in the childhood,the much warmth we share now,beside i was and still is in a way her role model and that's why she changed,you know she was the most desperate among us.."

Ash(dissapointed) : "ya,and that's precisely was my target and naturally only she hasn't quite yet come back to her own,and Gary..no i did go too far, maybe i should call.."

Misty(smile) : "its ok dear,no need to disturb them today again,we'll be there just let the sun rise"

Ash : "yeah i surely have a few works left here before i can go to Orange"

Misty : "So true.Man,you gave all of us a real scare,and when are you going to send your acceptance for the Hall of Fame position?"

Ash(tired) : "Ah! Mist,all in good times,i'm too tired now and just want to sleep in your arms"

Misty(smile) : "so do i,Ash."

Ash(excited): "but you know what,i've never thought before,but i guess today i helped to make a phrase easier for me and may be many as well"

Misty(smirk,hugging Ash) : "what is it that you're doing behind me,hum,Ash Ketchum?"

Ash(laugh) : "relax Misty Ketchum,i feared i'll really go down far far more"

Misty(frown) : "Ash it's not funny you know,you were self mortifying yourself,no matter your true motives and intentions"

Ash(hugging Misty) : "perfect time"

Misty(surprized) : "huh?!?"

Ash(smile and hugging Misty) : "All this trouble was taken up to pick up my flower from the Cerulian Frowers.Happy now?"

Misty(laugh) : "it's too used everywhere actually,we've rather grown tired with just about anybody spitting this one out anywhere,they may have a few songs as well"

Ash(smiling and immitating one of the Cerulian Flower songs from the City) :

"the beautiful flowers from Cerulian Gym/the flowers that of which i alwaysdream/Dase,Viol,Mist and Lil/all or one/just bring me some/give my heart the perfect heal"

Misty(smirk,scoff) : "Ash, it's not exactly pleasing if you were there"

Ash(smiling) : "hey,i was there remember,i guess i also was in this body as well to see the fun..haha..besides we'll be back to the gym anyway"

Misty(smile) : "you would've been killed picking up fights with just about everybody in the crowd"

Ash(laugh) : "i guess i would've.but i still have a complain to make"

Misty(frown) : "what is it?"

Ash(laughing) : "that my flower never described herself formally to me AFTER her date"

Misty(smile& hug) : "Mrs. Misty Waterflower Ketchum.Happy now?"

Ash(smile and gives Misty a Ring fetched from Cerulian while he was out to meet professor Oak..) : "VEry"

Misty(smile and wonder) : "Ah!Ash..this is..that's what made you so return so late.."

Ash(smiles and fits the rings into Misty's finger) : "ya,Ganger's good(finishes the fitting),Welcome to Ketchum Family Misty Waterflower"

Misty(smile,hug Ash) : "my pleasure"

(both hug for a few moments)

Misty(frown) : "but it's not safe to travel so far on Ganger,Ash"

Ash(smile) : "ya,not today though,not today"

Misty(smile) : "how's Cerulian?and which one?and actually you went there before you went to the Lab,right that's why 'don't call anybody till i return'..hum?.."

Ash(laugh) : "right.Cerulian is yet to come into terms with the fact that the youn flower dream could stay depressed for 2 years and then

suddenly a prince sorry a h.. b..(Misty shakes her head and and frowns)..(laugh)..no Mist,please otherwise i won't be able to describe the best comedy i ever saw..(Misty laughs)..so this brat comes and does his magic to get

the flower to fly all by herself to him,i might've been killed today had it not been for Gerninja,by luck i had her today."

Misty(concerned) : "they mobbed you in the shop?"

Ash(laugh) : "i went to Police Station straight away at 9:30,gave my identity,said i wanted a good amount of protection that too very quickly else if there's a shoplifting in Mr Keller's shop 3 blocks to the west,Waterpolo Crossing,red gem road,pearl house building 4th floor,right side 1st shop,then don't sue me,to which the Officer warmly complied at 10:00,shop at 10:20,but as usual the the people tried to mob me on the charge that i was the one indeed to break the heart of the youngest flower first then humiliated her in public second and then tried to kidnap her,forcing her to leave

Cerulian for Elite 4 HQ at Indigo Plature,Kanto two days ago third-this as is doing the rounds in local TVs,people demand answers,but the problem is before this news could spread upto here at my home,which if happened,they would've seen some great game with the whole Oak Lab Pokemons,the threat of which prevents a single one of them ever trying to break into Pallet as Gary himself is authorized to do that,anyhow

the press had a bigger reason to not try to mingle with me,now that i had given them a bigger puzzle to solve by declining the Hall of Fame(brusts into laughter)No,please let me finish,this is the best piece of comedy i've seen or heard or read ever.so they think now this new pest to the whole mass and especially Cerulian city being his target is a bit depressed,then our flower has indeed just trodden over this godforsaken brat once and for all and he's defeated once and for all and depressed lost his mojo wants to resign..(brusts into laughter)..just bear with me

Mist..(laugh)...but then appolocalypse approaches-suddenly that brat appears off the blue/in all smiles with his sinister crew/he gets to a shop as if to get his due/suddenly he declares a ring for his beau(brusts into more laughter,release Ganger and Gerninja,who brusts into even more laughter)

Misty(laughing) : "Ash,you've really become a public meance,Gerninja,Ganger stop that(Gerninja tries to stand on one toe fingur on top of Misty's head and Ganger tickles and licks her..then they join Ash in fun)Ash,then what happened"

Ash(in tears from laughter,calls back Ganger and Gerninja) : "oh..what a night,yeah right,i'm telling you please be patient,this is too funny"

Misty(laugh) : "Ash.."

Ash(laughing) : "what a night this comrades Cerulian/we must very first get rid of the evil king demon/Comrads let's unite and challenge to this man/force him to show what he hides below his tan..(again laugh)oh! man..Please,Mist,you just need to be patient.."

Misty(bit concerned) : "i'm Ash,but you should stop being too reckless you see,and you only had two pokemons with you,one already a bit tired from flying long distance for its type"

Ash(laugh) : "right i will;now back to this,the officers try to tell them that he's just here to buy a ring and go but a few young people weren't going to listen so i had to release Gerninja and tell them if they so wishes they bear witness to the ring i select and let us go outside and deal this matter like gentlemen,i challenge 50 people against Gerninja all at once..that's cause more the number more the illusion over my abilities and i could handle 150 such anyway...now the bet is they win i won't buy the ring if i do,they let me take the ring and facilitate me and my fiancée to a ceremony here and celebrate our engagement officially,to which a few said 50 on one,pokemon master or not none can disrespect Cerulian like he has,some said no he has come up with a plan-he could electrocute the whole sea,some

said he can move the whole police force at will and release Pewter and Viridan Forces too on us,in the meantime i placed the order,then i told them what is it that they have a problem with,calm down and lets talk.they said they suspect due to me,the famous gym is now closed and the Sensational Four all have left the city and they are not happy about it,to which i said what they want the Sisters or the performance which totally confused them and in the meantime i delt with the shop..laugh..what a night this comrad Cerulians...(laugh)..anyhow..now then some said what are you trying to imply,some said this is public disrespect,some women said it's gender bias,some reasoned heads said he has got a point,in the meantime i selected the ring(another burst of laughter)..oh!i'll be barely able to forget this ever..sorry Mist,but please.."

Misty : "it's ok Ash, you've become a bit of a storyteller,i'm enjoying continue"

Ash(laughing) : "so,anyhow they said they want the Gym to run again and the sisters to return,to which i said the Gym Leader was overworking and had the Frontier Symbol attached as well,then just probably burnt out a bit, holidaying now to get over the exhaustion and i have only respect for her and nothing else and she wasn't behaving properly as i was told so i just wanted to teach her a lesson and i just thought that would help to lighten her mood a bit and so on.. then they said no you intentionally did it and you were the very cause of her depression and so on to which i just scoffed that they are disrespecting my fiancée for whom i'm buying a ring from their very own city itself..this got them dumbfounded and bought me more time for the shop...but then they tried to make a comeback saying i indeed was the one who abducted all the four sisters no matter what i say and may be my fiancée is from among them itself whom i've threatned to marry me or..laugh..may be i've threatened all of them to marry me..laugh..what a night this..anyhow..this was my exact trap,i just said they themselves will come to know whether it's true or not if only they first even allow me to get ring otherwise i won't be able to marry anyone let alone them and mostly if i don't get married at all then none will come to know the truth anyway as both me and the sisters will accuse each other but if i'm getting married to my fiancée who isn't from among them..laugh(Misty and Ash both point to Misty's ring and hug each other)... now accuse Cerulians for mobbing up on me they will only harm themselves cause Elite 4 may cancel the Gym given that a local man like me who was from Pallet which is adjacent to Cerulian gets mobbed by almost hometown people..um,actually hometown(both laughs)..(Misty smirks and tenders Ash).. and the Gym leader was not behaving well...and then they'll come to themselves anyway as the Sisters would want to and have visit their home anyway,as they are still official gym leaders and even if there's any procedure regarding the Gym,atleast one has to physically appear in sane state or send their confident..and besides even if they are right why would they want to buy a ring from their very own City where stars like them has bought from each ornament shop since childhood and moreover if i'm to appease them i could bring a ring from anywhere else or just could order it,why would i myself even step foot in Cerulian knowing people here would be incensed with me..so this long thought of thoughts(both bursts into laughter)...got them so confused,i finally put the ultimate knail in the coffin by saying that the reality is that the Sensational Sisters have their own lives and they must understand that no matter how electrifying darling of masses they were at the end of the day they have to settle down and have a nice family,and whether their very own home Citi's beloved fans won't consider them for even this bit..(laugh)..this sentimental attack totally deflated them and then i just continued to gibberish to which i said that it's all normal and they just need to be calm and patient and the sisters has to visit their home sometimes they have to and they'll be back soon,then they said why are you here,some said whom are you getting engaged to,and so on,to which i said,Cerulian is world famous for the diamons and precious stones,where else would i go to except for here,to which they mellowed down a bit,but some said you could've still ordered it,to which i said would my fiancée be happy if i was afraid of the same people who adored me despite me humiliating their

own Gym leader and clapped for my funny antics,they just fell down from heaven then but then they said alright now that you're here

show us a few tricks,to which i said if Cerulian formally invites me,i'll be most grateful to come but tonight i've to go back with this ring to my fiancée and if they hold me up and delay that, Cerulians will not be as appreciated as much their ring,to which they did mellow down finally and then they said alright but we won't let you go without atleast a few tricks from Gerninja,its pretty rare that a Cerulian has a Gerninja which isn't naturally found anywhere in Kanto,Jhoto or Orange,to which i had to oblige and Gerninja showed a few balance tricks and all including the one she was trying to perform on your head,and then finally they were pleased but didn't yet budge saying whom did you defeat for your second gym badge here,which they knew which i said it was Ms Daisy Waterflower(both laughs) and her Dewgong one on one as she compassionately agreed to as i was just starting and but i had my Pikachu then as the whole world knows and managed to satisfy her enough so hand me the badge and i'm eternally greatfull to her for that cause till then i really wasn't good enough but after this i got really straightened up as she also gave me some advises as i was a mere 12 year old then and i truly have remembered her as a big sister since then and that's exactly why it felt bad when i heard the current Gym Leader's condition so just helped but i knew a battle might've made her either more proud or more depressed i just resorted to have fun...this term of emotional discourse makes them to fondle me almost(both bursts into laughter) so i also got my ring and then they said i'll have to promise them that i'll return here and have a pokemon show or battle or exhibition,to which i said as i would love to come but they must invite me formally via Kanto Elite 4 otherwise i will only be mobbed like i have been now and that won't be helpful to anybody to which finally they budged and allowed me to leave properly,and then i went to Oak Lab at 12:00 and then Gary's extended Lab side then back to Oak Lab and finally home only to see Mime is upto her dirty tricks with me(both laugh)..oh,beside(grin)Ganger was extremely quick illegally that is covered one part in 20 minutes which is his ultimate speed i guess could be a record in his specis,just told him to hurry up,Charizard my fastest takes 3 to 4,illegally who holds an illegal record for fastest ever Charizard from Kalos to Hoenn to Kalos(grin)..laugh.." Misty(smirk,lightly smacking Ash's head) : "mischievous hum?..(laugh)Ash,quite a mess you're creating now wherever you're going,and please don't roam around unprotected like this and DON'T RACE YOUR POKEMONS UNOFFICIALLY WITHOUT PROTECTION!..please,you've a family.."

Ash(hugging Misty,smile) : "so sweet is my flower's touch..(Misty laughs and smacks a bit harder)..um,ok,ok,lightly(both laughs)..and i'm always Mistyvicious(both giggle,Misty smirks and about to smack his head again)..ok,ok..no more..um lightly..(both bursts into laughter hugging each other firmly)..."

Misty(laughing) : "Ash,they'll eventually mob you for abducting me(both bursts into laughter)..."

Ash(smile) : "no Mist,Cerulian is Cerulian to me ever a funny place,i wouldn't have been able to come out of it so easily had i not had a water pokemon..so today's heroine is indeed Gerninja"

Misty(smile) : "after this mayhem you went to patch up with your family?"

Ash(smile) : "exactly"

Misty(smile) : "and may i hear a bit from there,i know the result but how did you calm them down?"

Ash(smile) : "Mist,i'm in this Bash Cerulian..sorry..mood now,i'm dictating my movements back at the Lab comedy style,please bear with me."

Misty(sigh and smile) : "go on stand up"

Ash(smile) : "so as soon as Daisy sees me.."you b..what were you insinuating,you've given my baby Mist a bluff and threatened her to be with you and you even doubt you own friend Tracy..so on,so on,so on..to which i said look if you were ever suspecting Tracy,you'd want to see who far he can walk with

you..which didn't please our Daisy Devil(Misty brusts into laughter)..laugh..sorry..Daisy at all..in the mean time Trace came out to have a gauge only to eat a death glare from Daisy,so the poor thing wasn't of much help,as usual..(Misty again brusts into laughter)..um,sorry,then Daisy mellowed down but told me to go back

home and ATLEAST,ATLEAST not to cheat on you the on the very first night,as if i cheated on someone with someone,whom i cheated to be with someone,who was infact the one whom i first cheated before i cheated someons...laugh..um,please Mist,i'm sorry but i can't help,blame Cerulian Mob for that.."

Misty(bit stressed) : "i'm waiting"

Ash(laughing) : "um..thanks,sorry for that,anyhow,next up Gary..man,you know as a former champion among bad boys i can't believe you'd ever beat me..to which i said the same thing that i needed genuinity..which hopefully appeased the devil..then Lillie..well its sad but i can't help,she started with calling me a b...,then proceeded to state that i had indeed opened the pandora's box,but as i said i know the contents as well,got kinda lost but again came back that it still was opened and that too in front of everyone,then as i couldn't play any new hands she continuted her victory lap to declare her supreme realtion with you paused to insult me again for leaving you for roads.. s...,and brilliantly migrated to the next part by confessing her feelings to Gary subtly hinting where i stood with you compared to Gary's warmth to her,as if the whole world never heard before,in the meantime i gave the same logic and tried my best for the sake of her future child,which she took as a trick to come into terms that she countered by saying i'll still leave you,which i again countered by the old card of future,which finally tamed the lioness but still she pawed me finally by giving the marching orders which i halpily obliged to save my life only to enter the lion's mouth just outside the door who barked that his grandpa was waiting for his prey and i was to be sent there but he growled in such a sweet and polite way that you couldn't help but agree...laugh..what a night this comrad Cerulians..laugh..won't forget it through all hells,anyhow,this was round 2..

Misty(sigh) : "Ash, you've truely surpassed all expectations really."

Ash(laughing) : "much honoured coming from my sweet Mist,who ever thought i was too sweet to talk sweet..laugh(Misty brusts into laughter)..anyway 3rd round started and the old hen;s den who was rather easy to handle but beaked me by questioning my head off as to how i knew the secret truths and what are the levels of my and your special pokemons like Gyarados and Golduck and so on as if he wanted a team rocket 2 himself..laugh..anyway this questioning was exactly the anticlimax of the early night Cerulian Fiasco,and it bored me to death,i somehow managed to lick his feet long enough to get out of there safely without having to transfer my pokemons this very night,which is why i had to be extra careful with the old bear..haha..round 3 completes..

Misty : "carry on,i'm sending your name to stand-up comedy before Oranges"

Ash(laugh) : "you'll save me from battling then finally,thank you sweety(tenders Misty's cheeks,Misty brusts into laughter)..anyhow round 4,now as i was coming out I thought Trace must be having fun now and i'm on my first night haven't even been able to give the ring to my flower and this bonehead is in the Orange of of Oranges and since Oranges with his flower while pestering me since Orange whenever i got alone with my cherished flower,which made my blood absolutely boil to the 8th hell and i told Ganger to fetch the god damn brat immediately,which he happily complied by getting into the dubnut's head..laugh..and Trace didn't know which side to sail to only managing to fire only the "why drag all else" bullet which by now became so boring

that i shot back a cannonball saying i needed to check our chemistry before i could join her in a parade,which he ashtonishingly and wickedly shielded saying they won't be able to match my partner but they would follow behind,which puzzled me as i couldn't instantly come up with an attack having to resort to embrace it out option,so the gentleman-looking-most-cunning fox found out a way to make the honours even and then straight from devil's den none other than our honoured DaivyDesil emerged having followed her

soulmate all the way as the wisdom nut i was ferrying around earlier,having bought it and now to apply it on me..and she broke the ground by declaring she had evsdropped,which made me sigh even in that situation as if i didn't know but fortunately the wicked fox was utterly defeated much to my merriment,Daisy showed how compassionate she was by caring to call me not by my surname but hearing my name from Daisy the first time in my damned life was if not the straight road to heaven then i'm sure i'll be doomed to hell.i realized the full trick as she had to oblige in front of my family and future card just like her younger lioness earlier and then took a wicked turn copied truely from the book of her cunning soulmate by

trying to create a little ripple effect in my calm emotional water surface by stating how devoted her little sis has been despite me being a f.. man-b.. sorry again,and then as she basked in the glory of her impending victory,she bit me by implying i may again go back to any wh..any given day but may i atleast divorce properly and make her baby sis suffer less..i again just played my family and future card this time dragging Tracy right into this with me as i could see that cunning-gentleman standing there with a long face whole time thinking of the final attack that'll finally bury me for good,anyhow Daisy didn't think that the sentiment card can be handled for long so she launched her final attacked giving me the marching orders specifically mentioning to go back only to home with the details of the rout and not to any waiting b..,which i would've had she not mentioned that and especially the rout...laugh..what a night...i need a moment"

Misty(sigh) : "and you had our engagement ring in your pocket?"

Ash(smiling,tendering Misty's cheeks) : "right.anyway,she also tried to drag Tracy to return with her as

she suspected i was a indeed a terrible influence over him as she saw Trace throughout was rather naïve,anyhow the wicked-idiot all along thought of a plan and finally sold me the sketch card that he promised in ths evening which i had to retort with a solemn concern that he needs to extend my contract here at the Lab,which he also bypassed by joking about my future and cunningly showing that how gentleman like i should be in that regard which is the true testament why the cunning-buffoon could tame DaisyDevil of all so easily..laugh..sorry..anyhow,the dumb buffoon yet came back saying i should call from Brock to God himself by myself to plead mercy for my terribly unbearable sins which i just about sidestepped by saying it's too late at night and then finally as i was coming back i couldn't help but to again set Ganger on Trace and snatch his phone away by creating illusions long enough for me to search up Brock and send a text that "Tracy Skechum,Ash's Husband" and No don't get so surprized i'm coming in terms with it..let the devils wake up tomorrow and massacre among themselves over me,i told them i'll myself leave their baby sis if they want legal procedure but the problem as soon as i leave you,they know what happens as i myself handed them you prescription..No Mist,it was needed..the bufoons must know that the personal life they so cherish also applies to their baby sis no matter who she becomes,why would i take all the blame myself when my sweetie herself always asked me to continue and finish my journey first then she comes..(hugging Misty very firmly).."

Misty(hugging Ash firmly) : "Ash,please,don't get so excited all the time sweetie,they're our family,no need to be so harsh..and no no legal procedure will take place..and i'm only happy that you told them about my plight cause i didn't tell them myself and had to..it's ok dear..just stay with me and i'll handle them and no they won't insult me for you..please.."

Ash(whinnying) : "then also they should let me some peace

and quite with MY WIFE in ORANGE ISLANDS FOR TWO WEEKS..unless they agree...those.."

Misty(sigh) : "Ash,you're not at all mentally well.."

Ash(stressed) : " 'course i'm not,but(grim)none is letting me to solve the problem"

Misty(scowl and frown,stern voice) : "Ash,we can't live alone and enjoy and let our family suffer like this.."

Ash(grim) : "Mist,please,i beg of of you,please.I NEED YOU alone with me for atleast a week at a secluded place as soon as possible,else i'll have to go to a doctor to get my mind checked which i won't be doing at all"

Misty(tendering Ash) : "dear,i understand your pain,let me handle the relatives and friends from tomorrow ok?"

Ash(smile) : "of course,but i don't want my wife to be insulted due to me,if these clowns try to get their dirty hands on.."

Misty(hugging Ash,deep breath) : "Ash!enough is enough,let them go and don't create any more fuss,i'll go alone tomorrow.."

Ash(hugging Misty) : "and they'll insult you on your choice the first day because some f.. b.. couldn't care to come back from Unova to his dear..No let me finish,please,i need to vent it out,and some other f.. thought it's so easy for Ash Ketchum to become the Prince of Kalos and get his face dirty by a person who cheated on our friendship and now's my beau made of stool and pus and i have to lick that cough and urine in public and.."

Misty(scream,stern) : "Ash! your with you wife..for god's sake..."

Ash(still whinnying) : "yeah,to be which took me so long cause i was a godforsaken brat but it would've been easier for me if i wasn't entirely forsaken by people back at home here except Gary,so i'm a playboy,i get insulted on the way while carrying the engagement ring that i'll give a ring and then leave my wife and enjoy some wh.."

Misty(tears,hugging Ash) : "you'll make me cry,you want that so badly don't you?"

Ash(tears,hugging Misty) : "um..sorry Mist..your just.."

Misty(hugging Ash) : "Ash,i understand the pain you went through and your self denial didn't help it either,i did call Brock myself and told him of our impending engagement.."

Ash(scoff) : "and he had some choised words indeed i guess.."

Misty(firmly) : "whatever,you know who he is and why he is so important to both of us along with Tracy"

Ash : "yeah,sure for a du..nah enough swearing for a day"

Misty(smile) : "that's my sweet 'lil bee,now come here(opening her arms)"

Ash(hugging Misty) : "you're not going anywhere tomorrow morning except for Lillie,Gary is not a fool like the other two mu.. and he'll take care of dumb stunts himself.."

Misty(hugging and patting Ash) : "Ash,please,i'll go to all the places,and manage it,No,they can't think

and say whatever they want about my husband either,i'll announce my engagement to the press myself"

Ash(hugging Misty firmly) : "but make sure they don't disturb me at my home or at ths Lab,Pallet has many open places,they can mob me all they what there,but if they have one word to say about you or mob you or try to get me at my home or Lab or you,and most importantly if my Mist is in direct physical danger,i'll empty all my

pokemons on them and won't take any responsibility for any kind of repurcussion..(Ash's phone rings)..here here,sure the gay dumbnut.."

[phonecall:

Tracy : "Ash.."

Ash : "Trace,i'm warning you the LAST TIME don't act like a complete.."(Misty snatches the phone away)

Misty(frown) : "enough Ash,let me handle(keeps Ash away)"

Ash(self) : "if these to..nah! i'm only jeopardizing my time with Mist"

Misty : "Trace,I know what he did,what are you so upset about?Ash isn't exactly in a good mental state ok,he deserves to be alone at least on his first night with his wife when he already has done what he could,just leave him alone"

Tracy : "Misty,i understand he's stressed but i'm suggesting that you handle the relations and keep him away from people in general as well ok?"

Misty : "yeah Trace,thanks and that's exactly what i'm doing,did Brock ring you back?"

Ash : "the dumb b.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash i'm talking.go to bed(Ash sits down on his bed looking at Ganger's pokeball) and stop thinking what you're."

Tracy : "Yes,he called and he has has his doubts over Ash's intentions which i only confirmed him to be as good as possible for an honest and self dignified man"

Misty : "yeah,i'm calling him immediately,will that be ok?"

Tracy : "i don't think it's a trouble,with Ash on fire not much of tonight is left,and here we're all awake, that's only Me and Daisy"

Misty : "ok just hold on for a minute ok?Ash,take my phone ring Brock while i'm talking with Daisy,Please do as i say,and be polite he has Violet with him,now go ahead please,ya Trace,give Daisy the phone"

Ash(trying to find Brock,self) : "the mu.. "

Brock(concerned) : "Misty.."

Ash(laugh) : "are you already dumped?(brusts into laughter)"

Brock(bit puzzled) : "oh..Ash..."

Ash : "first,i've killed Misty off and only using her phone to fool you,second i've gaged.."

Brock(sigh,stern) : "Ash,you've crossed all limits,who do you think you've.."

Ash(laugh) : "Playboy..don't you know that honey.."

Brock(very agitated,scream) : "Ash, don't get me started ok,you know very well what antics you pulled on me that day.."

Ash : "yeah,i realize,well i can be frank to you,but Viol.."

Violet(scream) : "you b.. you abducted my baby sis and you f.. b.. your threatening Brock now you b.."

Ash(solemn) : "well um..(laugh)you won't recognize your baby sis anymore though(brusts into laughter)..."

Violet(crying) : "you f.. brat,my...."(Brock Controls her)

Brock(Sigh) : "Ash,what are you upto?"

Ash(frown) : "as usual cheating on Misty..what els.."

Brock(stern) : "Ash,no matter how much Misty may cherish you,we're her family and we atleast have the right to know whether her fiancée atleast have the minimum courtsey to speak properly with us or not.."

Ash(solemn) : "Brock,I never have cherished Mist right?"

Brock(solemn) : "that's past according to your very own language"

Ash(stern) : “past?just two things Brock,i guess we can continue this call for a pretty long time and you won’t mind if i tell you to not do it in front of Violet cause she’ll get too emotional too easily,are you with me on these two?”

Brock(solemn) : “yeah,just hold on a bit then..”

Ash(smile) : “most gladly”

.....

(Misty and Daisy)

Daisy(solemn) : “Mist,i just don’t understand this at all..”

Misty(solemn) : “Dase,his mental state isn’t alright at all and he is too over-protective of me now,he wants to make up all his years at one moment that he was away from me that’s all..”

Daisy : “i get that bit Mist but he’s not helping himself at all and i atleast am still not clear of his intentions as simply due his own behaviour with Tracy,just totally opposite at every moment and totally confusing...”

Misty(sternly) : “Dase,please,anything but intensions,Ash has atleast got rid of my depression no matter how and i know more than anybody that none else could’ve done that..”

Daisy(solemn) : “but Mist,i understand you still i mean this is very strange that’s all and yeah Trace has told me about those substances,i just want my baby Mist back to her self that’s all.

Misty(sigh) : “Dase,the self you’re talking about has always been Ash for me and you’ve now seen it yourself...you know now to upto where i went just to be that self without that particular cause and how abjectly i’ve felt..”

Daisy(solemn) : “Misty,i’m just afraid of the fact that even if all the allegations against him is totally bluff,his antics with us of all doesn’t give a picture of a stable man who can look after someone as in a family at least you may take your time..”

Misty(sternly) : “Dase you tell me,a lunatic infatuated man won’t be so concerned about me that he would take me to a doctor and hand to my own family the prescription so that my treatment may not be hampered and my family gets to know all about my plight for future considerations no matter what he does with me.doesn’t that answer your responsibility question?”

Daisy(solemn) : “Mist,i understand all,but you’ve always been..”

Misty(shivering voice) : “and he hasn’t right..(firmly)..you know what,he’s going to tell the same thing to Brock why don’t you two just connect to him,i’m telling you..and you too Trace,just clear up the confusion that what you saw first time 15 years back wasn’t a bluff...just call him and see what he has to,i’ll be there as well..”

Daisy : “Mist..”

.....(all connects to Ash and the Misty also lessons).....

Ash(laugh) : “Holy company,so Brock family reunion ain’t it?”

Daisy(stern) : “Ash,you won’t have any if you miss this one no matter what Mist may do or think..”

Ash(smile) : “sure,i’m trying best,so here you see for you all there is this glaring,vivid,clear,distinctive thing exists which is THIS IDEA which never changed in 13 years so i don’t expect it to change in this conversation span and given the last 4 years but anyway,only for my wife’s sake i’m doing it and please allow me to express in clear terms my and Mist’s relationship now...so you see this beloved idea of your’s that Ash Ketchum was ever infatuated with Misty Waterflower no matter how much she truly cherished him and now that finally it’s been in public gospel that this statement that Ash Ketchum has been found in every bed with every imaginable so and so is indeed true,it perfectly validates your concern and suspicion that truly Ash Ketchum never cared beyond infatuation about Misty Waterflower no matter what she did or took him to be so by virtue of that Ash Ketchum will still hold the same view on Misty Waterflower Ketchum,who is his wife now...in one word Brock,Daisy,Tracy...Mist was and still is a random so

and so to me ever no matter of her views of me,this i have to contradict isn't it Brock?whether i cherish my wife or not?"

Brock : "you wouldn't have to if you had the minimum idea of not to make enemies out of your friends"

Ash(frown) : "friends?why is it so Brock,that i've always found i received more sympathy from my female friends and my male friends during my separation to my utter surprize and disdain?"

Brock : "well,you never were harsh to them,simple."

(Ash laughs but Misty covers his mouth)

Misty(hugging Ash,sternly) : "none moves out of here and none retorts,whoever wants may politely continue and Ash will not give any proof to anyone regarding his alleged private life except his wife and he has already more than done that,if you still want you may continue and Ash,either you'll be polite or it won't be good for you"

Ash(hugging Misty quickly then letting her go) : "right,as i was saying,that's great and i'm sorry if i was rude or is..but Brock you want to know why i did what i did after my separation or do you want to know whether i cherish my wife as much as she does or not..which question is bugging you the most?"

Brock : "i thought the two are sides of same coin."

Ash(smile) : "this intelligence is exactly why i told you what i did Brock..."

Brock : "well whatever you may think Ash,just proceed with answering why you did what you did in all regards for these 4 years and no we understand the press and you don't have to validate your alleged private life,just validate your actions to us and may be to Misty as well as to how after 4 years of absolutely no contact,suddenly you come and make things too easy to not get a suspicion over your motives no matter what Misty herself may think it to be..."

Ash(smile) : "perfect point Brock,perfect point,well i give you why i did what i did for four years,well all I wanted to was to create a nice little comfortable hell for me with a beautiful flame which was a bit too warm for much comfort.."

Brock(sternly) : "Ash,we're talking after 4 years or so.."

Ash(frown) : "So?do i have to confess my longing for my beau.."

Daisy(scream) : "Ash,you.."

Tracy(solemn) : "it's alright Ash,but i'd love it if you can be more polite and you know why."

Ash(solemn) : "i oblige,but Brock if you think because i didn't contact you for 44 years and so i should be.."

Brock(sigh) : "please,let it go,just tell me that you're not going to break Misty's heart.."

Ash(grinning) : "Break Misty's heart?Break Misty's heart?.. that's a funny one coming for you of all people but that's the IDEA of yours so beloved..anyway,so i'll break my wife's heart immediately after engagement for which i can't have any problem myself at all?"

Brock(sternly) : "Ash,please,be calm and continue what you were saying"

Ash(smile) : "as you said,if you gave me a chance only"

Brock : "Alright,restart with the hell"

Ash : "fine,and thanks for patience,really where would've i...anyhow,as i was saying i created this beautiful hell and wished to see who jumps in and Misty did that only,so she's my wife now.do you want to know now how i'm now planning to break her heart?"

Brock : "this answered your stunt on me and your longing for Misty who were on the same wavelength"

Ash : "but what buggs you is that someone else could also have been in if i gave them a chance?"

Brock : "exactly,and I know as do you Misty did give people chance but didn't get the reply,but she could've as well,as could you,so this is still an open problem no matter how comfortable your hell is"

Ash(hugging Misty firmly) : "well this also then must need Mist to answer her side,and by-the-way i absolutely forgot,please bare with

what i call my wife,a name Brock too familier to you,i used to call her Mist in Kanto itself,and you were there

so i only hope for compliance"

Brock : "you don't need it move along"

Ash : "i. can answer Misty's side but i'll have to ask for her permission first but first i'll have to know whether you would take that as her account or not"

Brock : "i 'll if.."

Ash : "no ifs,give me absolute"

Brock : "Yes,but i'll tally it with her words as well and then only believe fully"

Ash : "i absolutely agree with you on this,so.."

Misty(shivering voice,hugging Ash firmly) : "move along."

Brock : "got your singal Ash."

Ash : "first My account,whoever came before or after Mist to me except my mom and my Pokemons were there for a reason that my soul didn't represent,thus Mist gets the vote of my soul"

Brock : "so your belief is that she was destined to you?"

Ash : "see i don't like this idea of destined,i'd prefer the word soulmate."

Brock : "and all else that will come can't be that?"

Ash : "right.i gave you my reason."

Brock : "Ash,you might know i'm a practising full time Pokemon doctor now,lets play a game shall we?"

Ash : "much obliged and Brock because the this also is in public gospel that Ash Ketchum indeed helped to bust Team Rocket,you shall know that i know exactly well of your achivements since the day you parted after Sinnoh and by virtue of that absolute who you are and so on,congratulations for that...but lets see

what's the outcome of logic,i'm excited,only Q/A right?"

Brock : "right,can i start?"

Ash : "ever at service"

Brock : "right, let's play,Misty comes that day,you have an accident,she follows you for her bike,finds your tender care to Pikachu and falls for you.stay with me on this point.ok?"

Ash : "continue"

Brock : "1.it could've been M for her,2.it could've been for you and 3.Misty falls BECAUSE of your WARMTH,so there's a REASON,now logically cross these inferences"

Ash : "gladly,2.There's no i would've even remotely cared about F which atleast I did for Mist cause atleast for sometimes we were in a relationship and you were the first hand witness since day one till that unfortunately wasn't anymore but the span was 13 years and you can get your 2 from here,and you know if you go further then that'll prove i'm dead exactly right now so lest proceed..so the third is that,i had warmth,but i had thar for Pikachu not Mist and Mist saw her own self,that's the soul,in me,which is why i don't like the word destined cause i did the same but again to prove my side is why this process has come into existence in the first place so anyway,yeah you got your points."

Brock : "unsuccessful on the third,try again."

Ash : "fine,bear with me then.agree?"

Brock : "agree"

Ash : "my warmth made Mist fall for me,was one moment enough for the initial 5 years of blind devotion?"

Brock : "well some were there for 3,some 2 and so on,so on.."

Ash : "right,and they followed me not because i was warm to my Pokemons or them?"

Brock : "not all but some for sure"

Ash : "yeah,another did in Kalos because when she was 4,me 10,i came to

some service to her,so i was her childhood dream"

Brock : "right,this has a reason with your own invitation and this information come from your note to Misty,anyway,you may continue"

Ash : "right yes I did invite her for whatever reasons,i then have to only prove that Mist was the only one who didn't come to me for a reason but everyone else did travel companion or not?"

Brock : "right.here bear in mind i came as well for a reason as did Trace,i wanted to travel with you as did Trace"

Ash : "right,perfect.so i have to disprove the fact that Mist comes due to my warmth,and falls for that expecting some heart in return"

Brock : "exactly"

Ash : "yeah perfect but i'll have to ask Mist if she can bear it again..."

Misty(firmly) : "Misty Ketchum will bear with anything that her husband says with only a small complain that no matter what my husband did today,he deserved a his first night alone with me,alright lets continue"

Ash(smile) : "right Mist,stay along.so Brock as i was saying,I kicked Misty to hell and I also did the same to many,only Misty returned again and again and again and again,others DID NOT for obvious reasons now do you want to know why i didn't include absolute everyone in this world person and pokemon?"

Brock : "well,you know what i want and about others not returning,well they would've if only you gave chances"

Ash : "well that they didn't because their central reason to be with me was broken so you fail my very first filter and even if you didn't,if you didn't return to me once i kicked you,you fail my second filter,if you've managed to come back once but not twice,twice but not thrice,infinitely many times but not the

very next time and so on,then you also fail my second filter,but even if you did,i'll cheat on you,be with someone else or have a family with someone else,be loyal to them,and as many combinations you can create you may create and i'll do all that individually to you but if you still want me ONLY,then you've surpassed my first step that ok you're eligible.then i'll kill you by poisoning you and reveal to you that yes i'm your murderer and before death you'll ONLY want me,your murderer will be wanted by you ONLY,then you pass the 2nd door IF you can repeat what has been told just before,now while you're dying knowing that i killed you and i'm laughing in front you watching your slow death telling you that i'm your murderer,then if you gleefully want to be killed by me again and again and again and again and STILL say you'll not but want me ONLY again and again and be RATHER killed again and again by me than be with me for just one moment if the former assured ultimate unison though uncertain in temporal scale,then it's the third,now you'll bear all pain for me while i'm in hell but you're in heaven,if i'm starving on a secluded jungle,you're with the best of foods with your spouse and children happily loyally married yet feeling my starving only and is actually DYING with me and you'd ONLY want to die with me and ONLY wish to be able to be with me and starve TOGETHER,and repeat that again and again,then it's the fourth door..Now,all couples present here it'll get more and more uncomfortable from here so if you want please leave,except Mist and Brock."

Tracy,Daisy(unison,shivering voice) : "we'll go to the end"

Ash(smile) : "much appreciated,be prepared till the second warning"

(All except Misty in unison,shivering voice) : "continue"

Misty(tears,shivering) : "Brock,you..you still want more(scream,crying) MY PRIVATE LIFE,Dase..you..(crying loudly)it's MY PRIVATE LIFE with MY HUSBAND..this is my first...you're my.."

Ash(whispering in Misty's ears) : "Mist,didn't i tell you this you'll see if you push hard enough,and no it's ok(hugging Misty)just leave it upon me dear."

Misty(crying) : "i'm going and if you were..(cuts off)"

Ash(smile) : "so now if only Brock stays that'll be enough."

Brock(sternly) : "I will walk with Ash no matter where he goes,rest of you can go if you want"

Daisy(tears): "Ash,you think that we're.."

Ash : "well here you see,Daisy,i know what you and Trace are going through,and i perfectly know why you've been listening to matters our private life,correct me if i'm wrong

Daisy,ALL.OF.YOU.ARE.LISTENING.SO.INTENTLY.CAUSE.THIS.IS.EXACTLY.WHAT.YOU.DO.see this is YOUR very private life as well and these are YOUR very personal deeds as well and that's why you've been paying so close an attention and don't want to leave,so let me cut to the very end,even if you do all this i may not at all select you,why? AS IT'S MY CHOICE,and this is why Brock i don't like the word DESTINY as if it was just a throwaway that you could've been found with anyone BUT you get just a specific random one as DESTINY would have it,cause if only i see (agitated)EXACTLY,ABSOLUTELY,PRECISELY,SOLELY MY OWN SELF,MY OWN BEING,MY OWN SOUL that is (very agitated) ME in MY OTHER HALF,that is..um..(flustered,shivering)..sorry..terribly sorry..um,i just lost my mind..this

i..um,what have i.."

Daisy(sobbing): "i'm leaving as well,i only wish Lil was here..i'll tell her later..Ash,um..would you mind if i still call you Ketchum?"

Ash(laugh) : "that would actually be right Daisy,just call me anything.."

Daisy(tears,smile) : "enough Ash,i'll only sometimes call you Ketchum(smile),you made my day,i saw you first 17 years back your second ever badge,you had just about started,and i'm seeing you now..it's

almost moring now,just the wish that such sun may everyday..(choke)"

Ash(smile) : "Daisy,i get you,we're family,no need for these,please take rest,don't strain yourself,please.

Daisy : "um..thanks..bye"

Tracy(sternly,shivering) : "Brock you stared it you go till the end,i'll not hear a thing more,and Ash,um..anyhow,just come today sometime,ok..bye.."

Ash(laugh) : "sweet sweet Trace..and Brock did you get what i just s.."

Brock(shivering) : "Ash,enough.i've travelled the world with you for 11 long years..I knew you to be mischievous but only with Misty all time(Ash laughs) and sometimes with Me that too you'd do only as she all the time(both laughs) or i most rarely(both laugh) pushed you too much,you just brushed aside 4 years like a twig from your path,i'm too busy now a days,but you two are welcome anytime and come together only,what else to say.."

Ash(smile) : "not much Brocko,just the thing that i'm sorry if i ever hurt you and that's ever cause i was the thing for which the right word is Mistyvicious(both brusts into laughter) and i'm so happy ultimately you've become Mantykovious(both brusts into laughter) if that letter with certain diagram did help(both again laughs) i'm even happier...but wait can i get your dishes again(both laughs).."

Brock : "ONLY IF you came together with your wife but prepared to be swallowed up by Violovious(both brusts into laughter)..good Morning.Bye."

Ash(laugh) : "Morning Brock.Bye"

Misty(smile,tears,hugging Ash) : "What is this Ash?"

Ash(laugh) : "Serena doing her rounds(both laughs uncontrollably)..but really Mist how can you be so sure(both brusts into laughter).."

Misty(laugh) : "she called me and narrated what happened,she said "you're my goal",then came back and kissed you,to which you were a bit shocked but just waved her goodbye and then later severely rebuked her"

Ash(laugh) : "that's the polite version i actually showed her to please bare with me that to anyone she's the eternal b..mate(brusts into laughter)...

Misty(sigh) : "that's why she was killing herself why apologizing..(Ash brusts into laughter)..(frown)..Ash,cut that..(laugh)..you really did ruffle the whole worlds feather..."

Ash(hugging Misty very firmly) : “just to have another look at my sweet eternal Mist flower...”
Misty(smile,tendering Ash’s cheeks) : “my eternally sweet bee(both smile at each other)..tell me now all that you’ve been(both burst into laughter)..”

Ash(laugh) : “well just bare with my language otherwise no flavour(laugh,Misty laughs and shakes her head)..that brat does what she does.i invited her cause she was 20 year old full grown brat sitting at home didn’t know anything at all,his parents are very close to Professor Oak due to their profession,which i can’t recall now anyhow that’s not related to Pokemons and she actually as i said knew my mom and so on,i was her childhood hero or crush and so on i just thought that she was just a fangirl and so much younger to me may be i can help as Kalos was my last regional journey and after team rocket and all i just knew if i keep myself right,the league victory is just an inevitability and thus i decided to visit all 32 official gyms during my time there and wanted to enjoy also because of my personal demons and the libraries there has made me what i’m now and Ganger was ever with me in those places as well as my big bro chu..yeah,that’s his view of me and that’s why he’s with me,protecting and guiding me all time(both laugh)...anyhow so i decided to take her under my wings and Clemont and Bonnie were big bro and small sis exact opposite of May and Max but the bro was much un irritating(both laugh) and the sis was too oversmart(both laughs)..exact opposite pairs...Clemont is of Serena’s age 23 now and wanted to become pokemon observer like Trace and so on..he had been to Sinnoh,Unova and Orange as well but now wanted to survey Kalos bonnie was 11 then wanted to copy her bro all the time and went out..we met a bit later after i started with Serena..anyhow so 2 days in i realize this b.. wants the urine and all but i just thought it’s infatuation and my behaviour will teach her a lesson anyway..i always behaved like big bro and i did babysit all those..Clemont wasn’t like Trace when we came across him but much insecured but by then i experience was big and so i did what i could to them...oh i’ll go to what i did just after our breakup and then come back again...so i break up and was sitting beside the forsaken central battlefield with all possible thoughts going inside...chu-bro was kept at visitor’s room..anyhow Sarah comes in and mouths me to which i said many things about the past of the 3 and all anyhow that makes her realize that i was indeed a cunningly dense brat(Misty laughs)..(laugh)..no Mist,as i told you flower bouquet,warm gentle hand on the shoulder or a kiss otherwise bust despite your own girlfriend never feeling so..funny stuff..anyhow,if i returned from Unova midway,it would’ve been to do a friend’s favour not due to my longing for my sweetie,and that’s exactly why i didn’t return and that’s why i regret it and that’s also why these m.. should’ve reminded me which they didn’t or was too ignorant to realize except Gary,who always was most professional and least personal to me unless i told him to be otherwise,but i knew Gary had some feelings for Lillie and the viseversa might become true cause she is exactly Gary in a different body and Trace too had some feelings for Dase and viseversa and i knew they also were the same,Dase no matter what she did,was ever pure in heart,the real you-know-what i was telling your while i was being rude to you last afternoon...and you know Trace and that’s why when i said things it hurt him that much..beautiful man,beautiful man..anyhow,so i tell Trace quoting ‘Persistence Per Precise Perception’ just after the breakup along with other things as i meant his perception of Daisy and all else especially after i part must be persistent enough only then he’d get what he wants and deserves and told him also not to cut off just because things will get more difficult..similarly i tell Gary,whose professionalism was hindering him from slapping any of the others and any sludges that floated later cause he was there only for Pokemons and not other things and Professor Oak wouldn’t ever allow him to mingle there and he knew that it’ll only harm him cause it was more difficult than just giving your life for your friend cause your whole family and career and past is also associated and mostly Lillie,whom he cherished from the first sight i guess..way back in Gym battle days then just continued...Lillie same as i discerned just a bit of dust on a diamond which eventually shines just like Gary..anyhow,so i remind Gary quoting another ‘unnesseciate the necessary if the necessity is subtle enough’ among others to say look carefully what you want and what you’re deluding yourself to be in need of..this is you give your life for your friend but just before your body goes that moment is ever you and none else that’s soul,there you must be honest that i’m happy and i’m dying not because of a reason cause there’s always hatred otherwise which

gets all the good you've done throughout into a single little black point on all white cloth to spoil the total scene...that's abject failure in fact..these words comes from Kalos libraries and all then only intuitions and then what i meant to Gary was that do what he wants first and only and not mingle with my or your personal life cause that's what he might regret doing later...Brock wanted me to find other people as he did for you so on his date i told he's made of urine and so,which made him straightened but he thought that's my view of my flower of all and he knew all about us for 13 years,what a dumbnut...so anyhow,Gary couldn't and didn't plus he also didn't know much about your problems and Lillie never shared them with anyone as you influenced both Daisy and Lillie and to them you are a role model but that's what deluded them that moment is that's not you that's yours..you weren't in a good place but all yours has always been no matter what..that's the subtle necessity..anyhow,so except for Gary all the m.. told me Mist is unhappy and all never saying do a friends favour return..you were same your trouble was your friendship with me not your longing all you also wanted was that friend's favour from everyone just like me but the difference is that you were entrapped in that poisonous environment,which Mist,i tell you,would be once only heaven once i roast those rats there in Cerulian(Misty laughs)..so anyhow,i made the mistake cause i thought all these m.. are saying as if i'm not devoted anymore but all you ever told me was to watch my back and not to get my head turned,not even once you told me to abandon my journey and that's longing so i knew who you are perfectly...but i never realized that if i know i'm as honest as ever why would my Mist of all turn on me,who didn't the Mist that did that was a veil not whoose my wife now(tenders Misty,Misty hugs Ash firmly)..suddenly due to some brats the veil could raise the head and torment my sweetie so much,shadowfighting...my problem was my ego turned up and said you're honest,never apologize,Mist i didn't have to and i didn't as you saw yesterday,i just needed to do what i did exactly here,abduct you and forcefully take you away(tenders Misty,Misty smiles),showing you my longing but then i didn't understand that being a f.."

Misty(sigh,frown) : "Ash,please don't hinder like that.."

Ash(hugging Misty firmly) : "alright dear i wont,so i didn't understand that and i also was shadow fighting....your shadow tried to to mingle you with this urine and stool that's the ideas and mine urine and stool that's the words...you were fighting abstractions that represent objects me objects that represent abstractions..so we were same the outside was different...anyhow,the break-up was between stool and urine..total disgrace...soulmates don't have anything to do with representations,the end...so anyhow i was in that fight and all and then when the m.. tried to pull sentimental stunts i mercilessly torn myself apart from them and Kalos was then...so these 3 bufoons come along well,Clemont is a very nice guy,naive more actually but has great intelligence...so this b.. was hanging around me,screaming at my performances as if i was an total idiot despite my 5 titles and you know what if that b.. was the one in place of you that day in Viridian,i would've pushed the damn brat in that very same lake on the very next day in the forest(Misty laughs and shakes her head)..my Mist never did things even true friends did that Brock or Trace did that's not screaming you f...(Misty frowns)..anyhow,not screaming your head off during the match or show apathy or patronization that's then veiled as the word sympathy or compassion..which is as i said giving a glass of water to the friend who can't reach it on the table due to his sitting position..that's just being beside you through thick and thin without any expectations in return..but my Mist has nothing to do with these drains or ideas or representations or characters that are called virtues..useless stuff..i'll be virtuous because of me,not cause of bufoons..and my sweet Mist from first moment represented that that virtue...her very being was all about me..always my Ash(tenders Misty,smile,Misty also tenders Ash smiling)..from first day forcefully against whole world-this is my Ash which is now i know as this is me...and that's not describeable by great venerable legends what to speak of utter m.. anyhow that b.. was trying her best to veil ther soul which was later found out to be so and so thus i just bear with the b.. but then that b.. pulled a stunt on me and i didn't want that b.. to be making further scenes there when she gets inducted to the eternal hall of b.. so i gently waved her off..and her rection seeing my inaction was-what a cough,what a spit(Misty laughs)..and Clemont and Bonnie was-the just crowned Kalos

prince has just tasted and just smelt the just perfect Kalos stool...(Misty bursts into laughter)...so anyhow,then i straight went to the washroom,to which Bonnie and Clemont thought i was gonna cry in joy but to their utter disappointment,which they didn't know then,i puked my head off,spat everywhere off that saliva,urine.."

Misty(sigh) : "Ash,i know that part,cut it"

Ash(laughing) : "then i came out for the first time after 35 to 40 minutes there with the broadest smile,and they thought-comrads!the new crowned Kalos prince have just found the perfectly right Kalos sto.."

Misty(sternly) : "would you never give it a rest?"

Ash(laugh) : "Mist! if you want i can teach you how to tune your nerves so that you can,if you had to,in handsome men or in men like me would find only sto.."

Mist(loudly) : "Ash!"

Ash(smile) : "um..sorry,not me then but.."

Misty(hugging Ash,smile) : "spare yourself from the mass that i'll ever see in all eternity(looking at Ash),okay?"

Ash(smile,hugging and looking at Misty and tendering her cheeks) : "right.but hey aren't you enjoying my style if not the words"

Misty(smile) : "certainly not the words but you'll be a gem in stand-up if you wanted"

Ash(smile) : "you'll alone do me all,nothing else there"

Misty(scowl) : "my hero bee!(both laughs)..continue"

Ash(laugh) : "right so they thought so,only to be at the very end,when i was to leave i sternly told them i've someone waiting for me at home and i'm going to tell her about this,if you could look after of Serena,to which they couldn't even budge from the place till i screamed go and then smiled as broadly as i could to wave them goodbye,sat on the plane,told Pikachu-who was more shocked than me and was utterly confused-that buddy if you could realize what just happened earlier,you would've killed yourself given your temperament,but see i've picked up your mischievousness if nothing else,and i'll show it to the world from now on.. I don't know what he understood but he calmed down a bit and just lied down in my lap..then i thought how could a person turn on me like that,then the wisdom dawned upon me once a wh.."

Misty(irritated) : "can't you let go off that language?"

Ash(laugh) : "not since that day..sorry..nah really this is so much fun now that a year later i'm reminiscing them to my wife..haha.."

Misty(sigh) : "carry on,but every time you utter those,i'll smack your head(smile) like i used to"

Ash(smile) : "unlike then,i'll swear more to get more only"

Misty(smile) : "alright,Prince from Pallet,continue"

Ash(smile) : "much obliged is he with his wife."

Misty(smile) : "we can go on,but really you excite me carry on"

Ash(hugging Misty firmly,smile) : "why don't we go on,memories mean nothing as well.."

Misty(tendering Ash's cheeks) : "i want the buzzing of my bee(both smile then laugh)"

Ash(laugh) : "oh and its half past dawn.haha..anyhow,let me continue..so they were utterly confused at my behaviour,and i in the plane actually realized

Serena requires an eternall hall of what she is,so i called her the brat at first in joy of trapping the fish didn't pick it up(Misty bursts into laughter)..then i texted i'll anyhow have to confess and i'm going away so why not now..(Misty laughs again)..so finally the brat did pick it up,to which i in a shivering voice asked Serena to learn if it was really that brat or someone else..the brat didn't reply instantly but neither did i,then she thought this is strange so said just like a b.. says when so and so the word yes,to which i said you're a great b.. a true b.. that totally makes the b.. fall to absolute hell

from heaven then i went on saying how her soul was b.. and she was a b.. at 4 cause she was hanging around me from then and thus if plausible she was also a b.. in her previous life and thus proving she is an eternal b.. and the sole reason why there's the world b.. in fact exists and also so that she doesn't return with this garbage i can change i said she's called b..mate as she has always been atleast to me,thus she gets confined to the eternal heaven of b..hood from where there's absolutely no return plausible so i told the brat this was her and my relation eternally totally killing the brat off,but i was only beginning as i realized the b.. will make scenes at home,so i phoned them and said i thank you for allowing her to travel with us,your daughter a true b..,a great b.. they get bamboozled so the time bought there i used to narrate what she did and then told them a half-grown b.. like that is dangerous for public safety so that she may be confined in anywhere implicable and cut the phone blocking them all..."

Misty(concerned) : "Ash,this was too severe for a moment of emotion..you.."

Ash(hugging Misty tightly) : "that's the fate of anyone who cheats on my trust...later they try a comeback through my mom and Professor oak who tells me to reconcile to whom i straight said i've no consideration for anyone who breaches my trust on them in such a way that i'll for the rest of my life has to bear the pain and if they want to accuse me,for a playboy like me with name and power and recah,they'll need immediate biological proof the meaning of which they can themselves get out..no my mom was present when i said this i don't care...she knows me i know her the end."

Misty(concerned) : "how did they even come back?"

Ash : "well i got my security right with Charizard,Nivy,two water pests,Bulbasaur my big bro,Ganger and in rooms Muk who hid behind me in dark corners where i intensionally stood,any girl breaches 3 foot circle,gets mucked and yeah my bunch understands very well male and female human forms...plus i still say in case of public security that i'm getting married soon and the female brats that has humiliated me in public before due to their lack of teaching or ignorance during the class on the differentiation between a bro and a beau and i'd like compliance in this regard and then forced the Elite4 to empty spaces else i'll intensionally lose and later accuse them of improper security..so those m.. didn't have a chance but unfortunately in Orange i met that brat Danny..(both laugh)..remember him(laugh)..?"

Misty(laughs) : " 'what's that saying that you hurt the one most you cherish the most,no no don't get me wrong i'll never mingle with a kid like that,i prefer more..um..intellectual types', 'huh what does she see in that brat', 'why don't i get such treatment from her' and so on..perfectly my sweet bee(both brusts into laughter) .."

Ash(laugh) : "now i generally am warm but this bufoon asks how's Cerulian and all and i said i never saw you since the end of Orange and so on...but later this brat wants to know whether i've married the one he saw or someone else as i announced in Kalos,and at that very moment our Orange pest Trace calls despite gary's warning not to get personal with me and hand the phone over to staffs or professor and Gary was out on emergency and in the 4 years i spoke only with him,anyway Trace asks for the name of the island i scoff that i'm already dealing with people who can't forget personal issues without realizing they might not be fond for me anymore at all and now Trace tacking the chance of old personal contacts and breaching my agreement there in the Lab wants to insinuate personal matters,now if such things continue i'll give up everything including my pokemons and forget the word itself..thus the m.. gets totally flattened but in the skirmish the kalos brats appear cause they were Danny's relations and i didn't want to insult him so they fix a meeting and i keep Ganger 2 feet infront of me invisible and warn them not to breach 3 foot barrier..the b.. goes like i've changed and all to which i said she has been eternalized so change doesn't apply even this turns her parents on and they go about ego to which i scoff that thats the same reason why they think i'm fit for their kid who is what i told her and them..this totally gets them helled and then i tell them pardon is bestowed upon one by own soul that's ever pure and by nothing and none else and tell the kid that she may continue to travel to know about her first to be aptly able to interpret any world including pokemons and continue her associetion with professor Oak finally as my Ganger was told on signal scare the kid which i did many times in kalos this he did as soon as i walked out..they realize their mistake and the kid then tells me i'm her big bro and so on but also says she'll

love to meet my fiancée or wife as i announced as she wants to formally apologize..i last heard that she's in Unova and so on..anyhow after i handed you the note through Professor Oak i tell her this is my 1st girlfriend and i've broken up with her 4 long years ago and to me still she'll be the most perfect lady and better her interpretation of me,so if she wants she may given your name search you up and contact you,i know my flower(hugging Misty firmly smiling at her),she can't be rude to anyone no matter and even if not that brat would've anyway realized i was ever honest with myself so that's the comeback story...but that was a public seaport,and that was a secluded forest but Mist,you yourself wanted to do the same as well after Jhoto didn't you?"

Misty(smile) : "very much Ash,especially after you said it's not a coincidence..after that,really..but Brock was there,i still tried hesitantly for the very last time saying "are you sure you'll be fine without me,Ash?"..um..i guess by then i was too desperate and even if Brock was there i was really struggling not to just run upto you and .."

Ash(Hugging Misty,bit irritated) : "Mist,you have me for eternity.I don't even want to hear that word from you,you can say anything else except explicit mention of that most times and another form of body contact,we've done the thing you then wanted and we still may all our lives if we feel like in future,no rush and give it a rest,just tell me your story"

Misty(smile) : "so much disdain due to the other two?"

Ash(solemn,hugging Misty) : "Mist,i'm happy without my body not with it,and i'm happy with you not because of it in both sides,just being with you,looking at you,holding your hand,politely hugging you-this no physical vulgarity can't buy me,a hug as husband and wife who may do,now we may do as we are husband and wife now,enough,more than enough,civility is better than vulgarity anyday,anytime,anywhere,forever,and no it's not because of the other two it's because i hate my body and mind with hinders my oneness with my soul and consequently with my soulmate my sweet Mist flower"

Misty(smile) : "much appreciated,but I want precision.."

Ash(sigh) : "Mist,that comes much later, that's an entirely different issue,and i never thought it's an eventuality or obligation or most brutally it can't be the case that such a thing will come from the ever polluted cages that we're abounded by our own delusion..that itself is a delusion if there's such a thought;anything that describeable is polluted so by this logic so is that and it is but i never thought just as you don't that that's polluted rather that's the soul itself again in another form...so that's my view "

Misty(smile) : "Ash,i've just realized your final and the most dreaded filter"

Ash(broad smile) : "that's exactly why you're my soulmate and that's exactly why i wouldn't ever go till that while explaining to some m.. unless it's absolutely urgent cause only those who passes all else would realize the severity of this one just as you did this one, thanks Mist(hug) very many thanks...but also,i must prove to you that it's not due to any.."

Misty(sternly) : "Ash! i won't hear any of that,ever,and that's my final word on this topic"

Ash(smile) : "only cause you're my Mist!"

Misty(smile and hugging Ash) : "anyhow continue"

Ash(concerned) : "but Mist! don't get me wrong if you want i'll give every.."

Misty(stern) : "No!don't utter a word more on what you're thinking"

Ash(concerned) : "ok,but please Mist! this is actually upto you not me,always ever as usual has been and will be,please remember that,ok Mist,and i'm.."

Misty(smile) : "enough Ash! i got you,now may we continue?"

Ash(laugh) : "you're supposed to say the way i poured the coldest water in your most desperate plan,but way before that i will cut through any m.. that tries to relate your moment with the h.. b.. like that s.. No i won't stop(Mist shakes her head and sighs)..as i said for my

Mist since first moment i was her Ash,so if my sweety did,does or would kiss me anywhere in the most populated station or most secluded desart,it'll only be heaven for me cause that very moment both me and my Mist will cross the physical barrier and become the ONE that we are."

Misty(smile) : "Ash,we're doing that each moment.."

Ash(smile) : "exactly sweety,now the story"

Misty(laugh) : "well,now bear with me then"

Ash(smile) : "with Mistyvius pleasure(both giigle and tender each other)"

Misty(laugh) : "but you sweetly said "i will Misty, don't worry" and i just lost my last chance..then as i was about to ride on by in you word "godforsa.."

Ash(solemn) : "um..Mist..don't hurt yourself in this process,i'm right here,if you now want me to do those,well you'll not need my help there but stil i'll.."

Misty(frown) : "again, didn't we agree dear? no,I won't discomfort you at all don't bother and no i also am not suppressing my own wishes,i've had what i wanted that day, it's fine with me and what i've had with you so far no words or actions can describe,i'm only so happy(smile)...."

Ash(smile) : "Mistyly well,continue(both giggle)"

Misty(smile) : "so i pedalled along dejected but in the end i smiled cause i just thought,hey i'll wait for you forever,and ever and somehow managed to say

Ash Ketchum now i know what you think of me exactly..and rather with my Togepi,did return home happily only to be welcomed by the helpers with the fact that i must've been much earlier and they handed me a huge bill that those 3 idiots didn't care to pay,and this was not well maintained,that pokemon was crying and so they went on..i laughed and said that's life

Mist..bear with it..and then i had your memories most in the initial days at the Gym,then Gyarados came in and all that happened..now back to your part"

Ash(smile) : "right,but one thing,you were very emotional that day, extremely,that also made me realize that what you actually wanted to say when you said "just one more thing" and gave me the handkerchief,then even more so..but i trodden along just could only say to myself thank you

Misty..really i was a buffoon.."

Misty(smile) : you were 17 then,12 years is a very long time"

Ash(smile) : "I guess,but 17,well anyhow,doesn't matter..i much later realized it then confessed it when i was 20,been with you till 23 finely,No please let me,this we have to clear up as well,23-24 my head was spinning,24-25,we soured,then 25,we tried a bit but not intentionally..and this those 3 at Kalos never knew and besides i wasn't bothered to reconcile then..sorry again,Mist,please bear with me.."

Misty(smile) : "Ash,you can always carry on,No,not that, it's just inevitability,so continue"

Ash(smile) : "well 25-26 around those 8 months in Undercover and after and before i had to do so many things i just had a pungent feeling that's all,26-29 i to be honest didn't care a fig about you as in reconcillation i just never found my Mist anywhere where ever i searched through objects as they all were pollutants only...i found my Mist only beyond everything but that's the whole story..."

Misty(smile) : "exactly Ash,even 24 hours ago we were oceans apart,what is made you return actually?"

Ash(bit disappointed) : "well i was living my life roaming around,beating all Elite4 members,giving more and more thurst to my playboy image

intentionally to be distracted from things including your thoughts that were very intuitively disturbing me as not eactly you as Misty Waterflower but just the soul..the idea of finding someone once or twice did come to my mind but by then i knew that all is pollution so the next moment i just puked those off in utter disdain and resentment..till i reached Lance,the last Elite 4,i won in my fool around way that pleased Lance very much,and Lance having known me very well,was rather kind

and asked me why am i doing all these publicity things saying strange words and so on,i just brushed him off and told him that no it's all right,i'm just enjoying the attention till it dies down next year itself,Lance rather compassionately said that he knew me for 13 years may be,and he's on his last 3 years of service and knew professor Oak very well,so if i want i may tell him what it was or if it was about someone or something,i don't know,he knew your condition and he knew we travelled together at a time,and we both were in hall of fame now in two separate departments,i don't know,may he be blessed always,but God really send him to me that day,otherwise i don't.."

Misty(tenderly) : "it's ok Ash,continue"

Ash(smile) : "right,um..actually you know Orange did give me the pungent feelings even more,Kalos i studied a bit to get my mind up and Jhoto i didn't win the league so this being in the very next month after kalos Elite4,i got the distraction i wanted but Orange was hard and we in Orange kinda got very close(both smiles)..and that incident with Danny then Rudy of all(both laugh)....first thing says i remeber you and your little friend hall of fame gym leader at Cerulian now how's she,i just said i haven't seen her since i parted 14 years ago just after Orange which totally made him fall from heaven but anyway the brat didn't go any further...well,you know you must visit atleast the Gyms whoose badge you had and that's why Unova and Kalos was so busy for me being 32 and 27 but i didn't have to visit Cerulian cause i could pick and choose my region Gyms if i don't want to visit them if my home region in my last Elite4,which is how i set up and i have had relations with Mr Kane Slate and Foster despite Brock in professional form which they very well co-operated with me and in the whole world there's only 3 rock gyms the other two being in kalos and Unova respectively and Pewter was my very first,did go there they were good and professional and all but just entered the gym and returned and asked them from before that i'll go on the day Brock won't be there which Foster managed...Foster just told me he has a relationship with you but recently have had no contact on our discussion of Cerulian which is that the damn city and the f.. gym can go to absolute hell it's only good cause my sweety was there but she isn't now and won't ever be as she'll now be with me in unknown Orange Islands forever..(tenders Misty,Misty laughs and shakes her head)..anyhow back to Lance,so he was saying those but then i just wanted to get out of this uncomfortable situation with a venerable old man,so i said can i just see the Gym Leader's hall of fame,i heard Cerulian was doing the best so i just said casually without much thoughts that i'll just like to know the history of Gyms at Cerulian,Pewter and Viridian,the 3 closest cities to Pallet,so Lance took me to a room,I don't know why he did that but um..he didn't have to..its just the Grace of God,i say...anyhow,First was Pewter and i just hovered over saying that yes that was my very first badge and the leader was very kind to me,well Brock had moved to a different professon,so he didn't know much,he just said was it Kane Slate,i said no may be someone on the change i forgot his name,then he was about to show Cerulian i just quickly said ok i'll see Viridian first,he showed,that was my 3rd badge and so on,and you know Viridian has a tremendous history with electric gym and that's where i first got the feeling that i could compete with anyone and you know all of it..anyhow much time spent there,in the meantime a few f.. were roaming around trying to distract me and i would've been absolutely obliged to comply to them like i did in all other 6 places but this time i was Graced the third time by God as somehow didn't like the idea of much crowd that moment and scoffed them off saying i'll be extremely happy if they spared me for a moment here and let me peacefully to turn back a few pages of memory and i'll be most pleased to be excused then,which made them a bit flustered including Lance too i guess...given my antics for a long time,it really was something a bit difficult for them to swallow i knew the Gym histories in other places other times in my own interest not during formal dinners,which were perfect antic spots to confuse the Elite4 even more so that they think twice before mingling with me and i have a sway over them,but i never did it to Lance and never would to that much extent as he's a man i respect as much as Professor Oak and Sinnoh Elite4 due to the bust up is anyhow my pet,Trevor the Head there total pet(both smiles and laughs)...anyhow,then i said even a more bitter thing to the vultures saying,i've known Lance for 13 years by now and if also they left him with me for a few

moments i'll be most pleased and i'll also be extremely happy if i'm allowed a little bit of solitude away from the protracted glamour that comes from going through the whole world constantly for 17 years without a break and lately without a break from public glare, then my tired body and mind could be much relieved and then i'll later some other day may be able to entertain them more thoroughly, which dispersed them off from us completely, Lance was taken aback a bit but must've thought just the memories of my very first Gym Badges reminded me of my early teenage travel days...and truly Mist i realize now-start at 12,8 leagues, within 31 atleast 6 then beat all Elite4 within 12 months after the last league victory to get permanent hall of fame..absolutely brutal stuff, but still better than the m.. hanging around whole day for one badge despite being abjectly incompetent in all ways(Misty bursts into laughter)..anyhow so Lance rather was happy and thanked me from driving the crowd away, then i told him with a bit of irritation to show me Cerulian now and I want to go to a solitary place after that, and this godforsaken Cerulian's whole damn history of 1000 years(Misty laughs loudly)(smile)..was thrown at my face(Misty bursts into laughter) and i just patiently bore a bit from 1000 to 900(Misty bursts into more laughter) but quickly lost patience and asked him how's the Gym doing now, and that Cerulian was my second badge and i was lucky to get that badge(smile and tenders Misty) very lucky indeed.. "Misty(smile, tendering Ash) : "in all ways, continue" Ash(smile) : "and then i continued, as by then your thoughts kept pouring down on me so torrentially that i just said i personally knew the Sensational Sisters there and how are they doing? Lance might've got me there that it's exactly that what was bugging me and the reason for my sudden stern behaviour with people and very kindly ordered everyone that may we not be disturbed at all for a few minutes and the place was emptied, then he told me all about you and the Hall of Fame induction, which i didn't know how to take as i was happy for you but somehow thought then unlike me you must've got your partner, so anyhow Lance finished and i just said if i can have a look at the large sized recent Hall of Fame Gym Leaders pictures asking whether the current leader has been featured here or not, he said no the leader couldn't come just sending her written consent, so i said if there's any large sized pictures at all of the leader or not, and he said yes he had one but that was 5 years back when the Gym was registered in the most prestigious list, and just then he drove the first knail in my heart saying the current leader has joined the frontier symbol with her Gym and now it serves a dual role, i was a bit startled, well this isn't new but i certainly didn't see them in Kanto 9 years back which i saw in Unova and Kalos as well as in Sinnoh so i said that must be nerve wrecking work, to which Lance's face did turn a bit concerned but you know you can't talk about these things with anybody no matter what your personal relationship is, so Lance just said she manages it..then i directly asked Lance that if it were so that the two married and thus made it a single facility, to which Lance said well, no the Frontier Symbol Head just relinquished it after being beaten by her in a battle, i got more interested and said is that legal, to which he said that it won't be possible for him to tell me that as that'll be against his code of conduct, to which i a bit desparately said that just tell me the current Gym Leaders full name, me knowing you i was sure that the first thing you'll do is to get your newly gained surname attached to your name and officially make a provision if you were married, to which he said MISTY WATERFLOWER, your ever-pouring thoughts by then had taken a bit of a toll on me and yes these were vivid thoughts not intuitions like a bit in Jhoto and especially in Orange and then

your name and surname just put the fire in the heystack...no Mist,not entirely and only because of my situation which was indeed the biggest but 4 years for someone like you as i said yesterday and then that the double gym system,i was rather concerned...and i just a bit anxiously and abruptly asked him in a bit of an emotional tone that Misty Waterflower was actually my childhood friend and we infact travelled together briefly from Viridian Forest to Cerulian where then we parted our ways,and she saved me in that forest lake from the possible drowning and so...(laugh)here here here..

Misty(bit irritated) : "What now,Ash?"

Ash(laugh) : "just the vultures Mist i can see them-the vultures are insinuating that i'm with my childhood dream who saved my life and brought me back to life- oh! her beautiful face,oh! her sweet.."

Misty(sigh) : "Ash,i know how much these thoughts disturbed you,but hey we're married now,do you have to validate yourself even now"

Ash(smile) : "Ask Brock for that answer(Misty shakes her head)..no it was only the first round,today even more..anyhow,i was saying that the answer is no,because i didn't exactly think she was pretty or sane then(Misty laughs)..(solemn)..Mist,i've had times with you when i didn't think anyone could be more beautiful than my Mist but now i don't care at all(smile)i've my real Mist(both smile)..."

Misty(smile) : "Ash,especially now doesn't matter at all"

Ash(smile) : "right.so basically i didn't put any thought at all to her,rather she followed me..this one done"

Misty(smile) : "right!back to Lance"

Ash(smile) : "and she was of same age so we meshed well,but i never saw her after that in these 17 years but she was the youngest sister there and i'll just be happy to know if she was married or not that's all.then Lance said as far as he knew no she wasn't,but by then your bug has smitten me beyond repair and i again said if i could see her picture,i'll be very happy..then he showed me your picture in a room and prudently left the room just after just leaving me there excusing himself of urgencies and mentioning a person to guard the door and except for him not to allow absolutely anyone no matter who..and Mist that was prudence otherwise i wasn't in a stable mood and my chu-bro realizes me well,if then i did something of a physical skirmish and then they bettered me obviously and i felt physical threat and despondency,chu-bro would've thunder chaired the whole world and he would've himself set upon all my other Pokemons present on everyone..they'll get absolutely mad if i die before them due to other persons or pokemons and they have to see that then none will spare themselves and you know what their power is if they are in that mood- so yeah that's true prudence and anyhow i'm the biggest name in Pokemon world anyway so there'll not be a more important man in that building anyhow..still great prudence..anyhow i kept gazing at your picture that i didn't want to see in the last 4 years,it was 5 years ago but that was really by then even more heart wrecking to me as i recalled 5 years back we still were together and happy though problems did start to raise its hood..anyhow more than these i just kept gazing at your picture..and i just couldn't leave it or take my eyes off and unknowingly tears came to my eyes..it was a full sized picture,you with a V pose and i just touched the V you made in the pose,well it was a big sized picture but i brought it down Via Noivern and told him to hold it right in front of me and as he did i touched your hand made the V and just kept staring ,and Pikachu just kept staring at you and looking at me..and those goddamn vultures if were there..those bufoons..godforsaken.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash,you truly have become a pest,why drag vultures such beautiful description,i need to tutor you for

long.."

Ash(laugh) : "coach,remember Masy at that contest?"

Misty(frown) : "what's so funny about that?"

Ash(brust into laughter) : "Mist!Mist!Mist!Mist! still won't let anyone to say hi to me right?"

Misty(frown and scowl) : "what was that Ash?"

Ash(laughing) : " 'Ah!you saved my Pokemon,i always loved this type of brave and kind man,we need to discuss our future,are you free in the evening..a date?' |'um..excuse me but he's booked'|"says who?"|"Me,Misty"|"ah!Misty!are you his girlfriend?"|blush and flustered,um..no..um..i'm his coach"|"

Misty(smile) : "you still remember,it was i guess 14 years back?"

Ash(smile,song) : "the very first petals of sweet fresh rose/lovely's the first scent still in my nose/the first in my 17 is whom i chose/come to my arms to ever cherish this pose"

Misty(giggling,hugging Ash firmly,Ash alos hugs Misty firmly and smiles) : "Hum..trainee in poems now(both laughs)?"

Ash(smile) : "i went to Cerulian for my second badge with my travel companion Misty/12 years little girl always wanted me to obey Misty/fooling around,fake fighting all to make me know Misty/finally Cerulian turned out the yougest Gym leader is Misty/she would fight me with a face so cute in anger to tell me she's Misty/after that still followed me cause a bike owned by Misty/later my girlfriend the ever sweet flower Misty/but now I know no words just YOU'RE MY SOUL-MY MISTY "(looking at Misty who was beaming,both keep hugging each other firmly beaming at each other)...

(song,immitating,Misty's goodbye song)

Goodbye

But now that's such a hard thing to say

Now it's time to let go

But I never thought I'd feel this way

Promise not to be sad

But we both knew I was lying

Gotta fight back the tears

'Cause, can't let you see me crying

You're more than just my best friend

(smile,shivering voice)

What makes me Misty most of all

In our final curtain call

Is knowing that I won't see you again

(tears..little)"

Misty(little tears,hugging Ash tightly,smile,whisper) : "Ash,i'm just here why bring that.."

Ash(wipes off his tears,hugging Misty firmly,smiling at her) : "um..very sorry sweetie,disturbed the mood..but(smile)..still heart wrenching..but (smile)..finally...um..(laugh)...finally i've got the answer to all vultures that dared to write this and that deluded me to be away from my Mist for 4 years...(tears,Misty hugs Ash firmly,smiles at him)..um,it's ok..anyhow i'll describe...

(song immitating but even before start flustered)..(very stern)..just a sec Mist..(Misty a bit concerned)...just a sec..(extremely stern and grave,Pikachu is suddenly out of sleep very alert and grave as if he also has experienced something very pungent and dangerous)...(hugging Misty firmly)..just..just give me a moment..

Misty(hugging Ash firmly,solemn) : “Ash,your Misty is your wife now,we were just having fun..come on Ash,the by gones are by gones..please..Ash..”

Ash(very stern as if some memory playing in his mind and he’s trying to totally devastate them once for all,hugging Misty firmly,shivering but firm and low voice) : “yes,that’s the thing..but i recalled no its just a thought..a possibility..a chance..a unit of web of complex thoughts that either makes or breaks one..just a moment Mist,please bear with me..Pikachu sleep,not a trouble..(Pikachu goes back and keeps looking at Ash intensely.)...all those days in Kalos libraries at night time only me and Ganger the rest of the world never knew...would pick up the few books...that’s actually what actualized and established my intuitive and abstract conviction...but this vulture..i’ve probably didn’t cook carefully..(smile)..no i get it now...(laugh,grin)..i get it now..no damn vulture can pass me,my soul...lets play then..(grin)..lets play..

Misty(solemn,hugging Ash tightly,keeping her head on his chest) : “Ash..for me please stop it..we will go to Viridan Lake tomorrow..just you and I..and no it won’t be a goodbye..you are your Misty you know that,we’re soulmates Ash,just brush this one aside..for eternity they can’t separate us..nothing is their except us..it’s all our own fooling around play...we’re ONE just an illusion as two,i want to see me as you..remember..please Ash..”

Ash(stern,smile) : “yeah Mist,i’m sorry that i’m giving you more pain..but please just this one,it’s very dangerous if this damn brat remains...(laugh)..now i recall...

(song immitating)

*I close my eyes and I can see the day we met,
Just one moment and I knew:
You're my best friend, do anything for you.*

*We've gone so far and done so much
And I feel like we've always been together.
Right by my side through thick and thin,
You're the part of my life I'll always remember.*

*The time has come,
It's for the best, I know it.
Who could have guessed that you and I -
Somehow, someday, we'd have to say goodbye.*

(brusts into laughter,Misty hugs Ash firmly tears..)

Misty(tears) : “Ash,you’re making me cry..why suddenly..”

Ash(wipes Misty’s tears off hugging her firmly) : “i’ve got it Mist,finally..(brusts into laughter but shivering voice,tears)..death,huh?!?..death..physical death,social death,emotional death,mental death..and contacts...that is also death..(laugh)..the vultures so sweet they thought this would be untenable,unshakable,unbeatable,unbearable...IMPOSSIBLE..(brusts into laughter and tears,Misty cries hugging Ash)...(very stern,firm but shivering low voice,tears)..don’t cry Mist,nothing but us..and this is my answer. To those dam brats...(hugging Misty very firmly)...

cutting off all bondages every bit of it/i don’t care i don’t care,i just don’t care a bit/i’m free,i’m free nothing’s never not me/i’m all,i’m all,anything else did flee/without me without me things will never exist around/but among all there’s Misty with me ever abound/i’m the sky never dependent but there’s the thing/my freedom is the same as Misty is my own being/i don’t care what if’s,i don’t care to explain/i’m clear,perfect wisdom of my Misty’s contents/there’s all i’ve dissolved i’ve conquered all/if i want nothing else will exist nothing at all/Nothing exists including me in no form nor did or will/i know the rest let me now circle Misty wheel/Misty’s a name appearing a way

which the current me/i'm Misty,Misty is all,we're you can see/Misty doesn't hinder me,i don't care she or he/I'm Misty,not my fault i see Misty as thee/I've crossed all the turns,nothing except Misty/this then becomes inevitable my second form is Misty/i've done what i could to test and test Misty/i knew it's my reflection its what's Misty/i've cut everything else who else but Misty/with me unto ever is there is Misty/it's inevitable the end i don't see anything but Misty/i'm sorry that i'm Ash if i've to say Misty/I told the contents there's nothing no/neither me nor Misty, reality is so/i'm Ash i'm bounded just so is Misty/my bound her bound I'm Misty just Misty/hereby Must known be it that I'm all and Misty/without me no Misty as you see I'm Misty.

(Pikachu intently looking at Ash,Ash exhausted of emotion,shivering still hugging Misty firmly..Misty stopped crying looking at Ash with a broad smile,hugging Ash)...just a sec Mist,that was only the first..those brats..i will finish it now more radically...

I'm impossible to describe as you see so is my Misty/I'm impossible to comprehend as you see so is my Misty/I'm impossible to fathom as you see so is my Misty/I'm impossible just I'm and I'm my Misty/I'm me and that's Me,yes as my Misty/i'm now Ash Ketchum thus also my Misty/this all is what it is I and my Misty/It's the same what am I,is that I'm my Misty/I'm here bounded detached but i've my Misty/I'll play what i'm as will my Misty/again and again if here is me and my Misty/this is this as what is me and my Misty/difference in unimaginability still me and my Misty/doesn't matter what is there,reality is me and my Misty/this all is what it is I and my Misty/It's the same what I'm,is that I'm my Misty.

and finally i've got the higher radicalized version..you know just goes on infinity level in radicalization,just a piece(Misty beams,Ash smile at her and both hug each other firmly) Ever present ever existent,i'm what i'm/my name you said Ash Ketchum,but i'm what i'm/not bounded by my body or the mind or even the soul/i've got nothing to say,cause nothing can describe my soul/i've got nothing to do,nothing to be,nothing to rue/i know who what i'm,forever free,free from rue/the only way to realize me,is who you call Misty/I'm that,I'm that,just take a look, I am Misty"

(Ash smiles at Misty,hugging her very firmly..Misty beams at Ash,hugging Ash very firmly...they hug each other for a few minutes)

(MISTY SINGS HUMMING WHISPER)

Misty(humming,hugging Ash firmly,Ash is also hugging Misty firmly,both smiling at each other) :
“

Goodbye

But now that's such an easy thing to say

Now it's time to let go

But I ever knew I'd feel the joyous way

Promise not to be sad

But we both knew I was lying

Gotta fight back the joy

'Cause,I don't want to show my playing

You're my Own Being...

(smile,tears,Ash hugging Misty very firmly and smiling at her,Misty hugging Ash very firmly,whispering,singing the rest of the song in Ash's ears)

What makes me Misty all and all

In my soul and my all

Is that I'm my Ash forever,

again and again...

(smile,tears,Ash also smiles and tears rolling down his cheeks,Ash and Misty hugging each other very firmly)..”

(Ash and Misty stay hugging each other firmly smiling at each other for a long time)

Ash(smile) : “Our Final goodbye,for this time,as usual..what’s up in next one(smiles)?”

Misty(smile) : “First we’ll be ONE and ONE and then for your next part i’m your Pikachu(both smiles)”

Ash(finally laughing) : “but i won’t be your Godly(both bursts into laughter)..”

Misty(smiling) : “why suddenly Ash?”

Ash(smile) : “no you know what i was just running through what i told you during our session in noon(both laughs)..just recalled i go way away and you get frustrated and so move way away with those who won’t go away...(laugh)..then i recalled what i read once..contact,contact,contact..

(laugh,Misty smiles)..you know Mist(laugh)..i just should’ve said the the day you were singing the vulture version of the one you sweetly sang,so beautiful(Misty laugh and then beams at Ash)..that i remember what i read that day...’where’s contact if there’s only you?’...then i realized that i’m Misty and that’s it so that..but you went ahead..”

Misty(smile) : “yeah,that is what it is Ash,i realized you were desperate to say ever no matter what...so i said i or you-death doesn’t matter,yeah i don’t want the pain but(beams) just doesn’t matter(smiles)..I’m Ash and that’s it...”(both hug each other firmly smiling at each other)...

Ash(smile) : “but still you know i don’t like this heart-wrenching it’s rather inevitability to me..why bother when unison is ultimately what you want?”

Misty(smile) : “you can only have the highest heart-wrenching if you do have had or are established in the very unison only Ash,it’s just a play you know the end..”

Ash(smile) : “absolutely..i’ve always thought about this death,death,death,rather frustrating..thanks Mist,certainly very clear now(hugging Misty firmly)”

Misty(smile,hugging Ash firmly) : “as usual”...(they stay hugging each other and smiling at each other for some time)...

Ash(smile) : “yeah once souled ever souled”

Misty(smile) : “soully true”...(they again stay hugging each other and smiling at each other for some time)

Ash(laugh) : “now finally i want to roast that goodbye crap(both laugh)..cause i really want to go everywhere with it.(both smile)..by the way all this and more to come forever at 12..had to smack each other(both bursts into laughter)..

here it is->

(imitating)

I close my eyes and I can see the day we met once more,

Just one moment and I knew:

You're my soulmate,i'm nothing but you.

We've gone so far again doing so much

And that's just again as we've always done together.

Right by my soulmate, playing through always,

You're all of my being as I laugh at the word remember.

The time has come,

It's just to take a break,I know it.

it's time to pack up this one..

for the return to next bit,where i'll fool you the first time..

(both smiles)...(hugging Misty) yes,death is laughed off but so is life cause it was already said that after death anyhow ONE..so rather useless is both life and death,mere wordplay..but being what we

are,alive,lets play(both smile at each other)..but you know next time i should always say i'm booked(both bursts into laughter)..am i wrong?"

Misty(hugging Ash,smile) : "who should answer?"

Ash(solemn) : "Mist,i wish i could understand.."

Misty(looking at Ash and showing the ring,smile) : "Ash,i've this now remember,as usual?"

Ash(smile) : "just i could say those words you said,'i'm booked',but i just didn't want to create a fuss.. that's all you know but then..nah! let it go,vulture business(both laughs)"

Misty(smile) : "right Ash,remember my name,but Ah!your ring i.."

Ash(smile,giving her another ring) : "waiting for my flower to hand over to me.."

Misty(looking at the ring,then looking at Ash) : "Ash..(gives it to him),this is.."

Ash(Misty is fitting Ash's ring) : "yeah(laugh)..the Cerulian brats thought it's a mandate that it's only one way traffic(both laugh).."

Misty(fitting the ring in and looking Both looking the mirror,smile) : "Perfect,but Ash,the size is.."

Ash(smile and hug Misty) : "i'm not new,i should've given it 5 years ago, it's from then,you though have become skinnier,concentrate on me(both bursts into laughter)"

Misty(smile) : "Ash..this is..my dream come true.."

Ash(smile and hugging Misty) : "the first part of the two"

Misty(smile and hugging looking at Ash) : "Ash.."

Ash : "no rush though,we've got ages to fix the timeline"

Misty(smile,shivering) : "you want everything then?"

Ash(smile) : "sweetness turns bitter if it's tasted again and again(Misty beams)..all in good times

Mist,all in good times..."

(both hug)

.....

(5 minutes later,Cilan Calls,both bursts into laughter)

Ash(laughing) : "i got it Mist,just watch the fun..(both bursts into laughter).."

Cilan : "um..hellow Ash,sorry to disturb you but..."

Ash(frown) : "is it a personal sweet talk sweetie as i'm in the mood or is it not?(both bursts into laughter)"

Cilan(angry) : "so,you're on the spot then(Ash and Misty bursts into laughter),fine i just.."

Ash(laugh) : "Brock told you a few minutes ago and you want to check my room(both bursts into laughter)?"

Cilan(sigh) : "Ash please,you know me i couldn't be happier if.."

Ash(laughs) : "yeah,fine i'm sending you to the spot herself(both bursts into laughter).."

Cilan : "hey,um.."

Misty(laughing) : "Cilan,it's just me."

Cilan(frown) : " you're,(beam), oh..um sorry 'Mam(both laughs)..i mean..sorry Ms Misty Waterflower(both bursts into laughter)...i'm so happy that my friend..um..well(both bursts into laughter)..(frown)..hey Ash,cut it..um..sorry 'mam..i'm so happy you've given my friend a chance..he's just like that ever an idiot..um sorry mam..i..(both bursts into laughter).."

Misty(laughing) : "dear Cilan,you've made a small mistake(both bursts into laughter)"

Cilan : "um..very sorry 'mam,i'm very sorry..i beg your pardon 'mam(both laugh)..it's just that he has..um.." (both bursts into laughter)

Misty(laughing) : "Cilan your friend has abducted me(both bursts into laughter)...and has announced a ransome upon me..(both bursts into laughter).."

Cilan : "um..abduct..i see..you..mean(beam)..um..congratulations 'Mam,many many congratulations,may my friend ever receive your compassion..um..(both bursts into laughter).."

Misty(smile) : "Cilan,you should say the my name properly then shouldn't you?..(both smile).."

Cilan(smile) : “um,yes ‘mam of course,Mrs Misty Waterflower Ketchum...congratulations again ‘mam fervant and much..i’m sorry to disturb you ‘mam..(both smile)..”

Misty(smile) : “it’s ok Cilan,how are you and Jane?”

Cilan(smile) : “um..we’re fine ‘mam,we’re fine,and my gratitudes for asking..we’re happy together..she’s a big fan of your’s as well..we both..”

Ash(takes back the phone,Misty laughs) : “my fan Cili right?(both brusts into laughter)..”

Cilan(sigh) : “Ash,please,behave properly in front of ‘mam..(both laughs)..”

Ash(laughing) : “Cili,you and Jane are getting a special treat from my insignificantest wife(both brusts into laughter)..”

Cilan(sigh) : “Man,you should grow up you know(both brusts into laughter)..(sigh)..you should be so happy that ‘mam has accepted you as her other half..”

Ash(laughing) : “ ‘mam has been absoutely traumatized to death to accept me as her bestest half(both brusts into laughter)..”

Cilan(sigh) : “fine(both laugh)..just don’t be impolite ok?..you must understand how much ‘mam has to look after and now you’re there yourself(both brusts into laughter)..(sigh)..i’m sorry ‘mam,but he intentionally gets into all sorts of controversies(both brusts into laughter)..”

Misty(laugh) : “i’ll see about controversies Cilan,don’t worry..but you and jenny are getting a special treat on our formal ceremony..you’re most welcome and will have a personal hangout with me where we can share our knowledge..you should come at any cost..we’ll do it within a month at Cerulian Gym..so,you’re actually ordered to come..agree(both smile)..”

Cilan(overjoyed) : “um..thanks ‘mam,many many thanks..and we’ll surely come..surely,you don’t have to be worried about us,we’ll go surely...and it’ll be enough for us to have a chance to be able to speak with you in a ceremony..thanks mam..i congratulate you heartily..”

Misty(smile) : “thanks Cilan,now talk with your friend...”

Cilan : “um yeah surely thanks again ‘mam..”

Ash(laugh) : “Cili,whoose bigger?(both brusts into laughter)”

Cilan(angry) : “Ash,i’m sorry i called you at this time and i beg ‘mam’s pardon fervantly for disturbing her but the news..”

Ash(laughing) : “Cili,if my leastest half is ‘mam,what am i?Sir Lord Sir Sir Lord..(both brusts into laughter)”

Cilan(sigh) : “fine,may you and ‘mam be happy forever”

Ash(laughing) : “not in the Godforsaken Cerulian the goddamn gym the utter Cerulian..”

Cilan(sigh) : “good night!(both brusts into laughter)..are you even sane Ash?now trash talking ‘mam’s dear city(both brusts into laughter)?..you..(sigh)..anyway,be happy with mam,’mam thank you for your kindness,and i just got very excited if my poor friend’s fortune has turned..and he’s always like this may you be kind to him(both laughs)..i beg your pardon for calling at this time..

Misty(smile) : “it’s alright Cilan,i’m so happy to that you called.thank you.”night and take care.”

Cilan : “thanks..”

Ash(frown) : “you dumb buffoon..”

Cilan(angry) : “Ash,don’t disturb ‘mam(both brusts into laughter).GOOD NIGHT.”

Ash(laughing) : “..sweet sweet Cili..(both brusts into laughter)...(smile)really Mist,Cerulian shall see how to be a proper admirer..(laugh)beautiful man,beautiful man,beautiful(both brusts into laughter)..

Misty(laugh) : “there’s no sleep tonight Ash,and(smile,hugging Ash firmly)..i don’t want to at all..you really is all that’s me..”(Ash hugs Misty firmly and tenders her head)

Ash(smile) : “that’s the doseage for me as well,but hey back to Lance right?”

Misty(smile) : “right.”

Ash : “so Pikachu just kept staring at you and looking at me and was very excited and was saying a single thing consistently,he you know understands me as

well as anybody and he himself was happy to see
you again after a very long time and he was
always on my shoulder except the moment during
breakup,you know he doesn't understand break-ups and all cause his worldview is totally
different,but probably he must've felt something as he used to see you all the time or hear you
during our phonecalls and all and then we didn't
call and all that for a very long time,so he was happy and pointing to
your picture in a low voice started constantly
saying one word "Pikachupi!Pikachupi!Pikachupi"
his word for "MISTY"..and i just felt like i was
looking at something so familiar yet so far as if i
was touching something kept in front of me yet
the touch felt like as if it's lives million lives
apart..as if i knew somehow a million years ago in
a life many many lives ago and shared infinitely many
memories that were so precious that i just
couldn't move after all these many years later and despite my internal bliss of the joyous memories
that i might've shared,it was only covering an unfathomable
darkness that i'm touching something long
gone no matter how joyous it's just memories it can't be revived anymore it's DEAD..this death was
unbearable to me as i just realized that it can't be dead somehow but no matter what it just can;t be
death and death made no sense yet this idea of death as if was cruelly grinning at me and devouring
my being completely..and Pikachupi flet like a warm breeze hitting
my face constantly,without ceasing but it was sweet yet that darkness as if was only cruelly veiling
it's lurking teeths that were about to tears me apart and was licking it's lips in the impending and
inevitable joy as soon as i fall...and tears
automatically rolled down my cheeks profusely i later found out..and(bit
choked)..it was then i first had a glimpse of what
you really are to me and what i'm myself..there it actually felt like it's
only me million lifes ago yet so far away and it's
as if just another type of body that i had and i've
ever so longed for a grand union again just to get rid of all bodies and differences thatt is
imaginable to the one permanent existence consciousness that i truely am..and it
wasn't like looking at your own 5 year old picture,it
was something way way stronger than anything i
ever have heard,read,seen or experienced that i
can relate to..and yet it was so natural..i forgot actually i
can't really describe what i did see but i didn't see
flesh and blood at all there or anything related to you,i didn't know if you were Misty or whatever i
just knew that it was me only me but this idea of death cruelly was hindering my realization and as
by then i had
become habituated to by analysis to separate out flesh and blood and ideas and all and no i didn't
even remember any good things that you may've
ever done to me or who you were etc,Pikachu's
words and this picture had given me the
realization that i never imagined,i just realized as if someone firmly but gently speaking in my head
in
my own voice and exactly the first moment i herd this voice i conquered that idea of death,the voice
said- "MISTY-that's your soul,you are that
as well and the difference you're making is only
your own illusion,you are Misty and Misty is you,no
difference is there,see it for yourself" ..and I don't

know how long i stood there or i just didn't want to part,i just got overjoyed and the tears just became of joy unlike a few moments ago...i had an intuition of soul as being indescribable but i felt it then and there it self...i on one hand realized i'm truly the soul and all else word and things are nothing and simultaneously you are also part of me or you're only me myself..i was my Misty indeed and this intuition that Misty is inside me not out here finally got vivid beyond doubt for me but..(laugh)..here here here.."

Misty(deep sigh) : "Ash, you're also a Disaster Master!why break this moment up?i was seeing that as well.."

Ash(bit puzzled) : "um..sorry..but(laugh)..i just realized now that if then,exactly then some vulture dared to be around and this is another God's Grace that they didn't,but if they did and disturbed me or gave the scene to the press,i would've been very happy to set at that very moment all of my pokemons on the vulture if i was even remotely disturbed then or my moment went public,but God didn't let that happen out of the infinite compassion,so all vultures were saved and

No,Mist really,if i didn't get you due to some vultures roaming around then disturbing me,my name would've

been written with blood then and there and i knew nobody present in that building could do anything about me or my pokemons actions and it wouldn't have been nice and i would've become a real nerve wreck then as i would've tried to push my pokemons to absolute ultimate,killing them and myself in the process..now so hopefully vultures showed some intelligence there and saved their godforsaken lives and MINE as well..anyhow..vulture is a good name i.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash,i would like that the infinite compassion be helpful to you in restraining me from smacking you the next time you suddenly drag vultures in a most beautiful scene,continue now"

Ash(laugh) : "alright,alright,so the vultur..um,no don't do that(Misty lightly smacks Ash's head),its ok(laugh)..so sweet in my flower's sweet touch(Misty frowns and mocks smacking then laughs shaking her head,Ash smiles)..ok do that always but gently.."

Misty(sigh) : "Ash,please you.."

Ash(smile) : "ok,ok,bare with me,i'm just back,so i was in this trance like state and then i was brought back to my senses by a Gentle hand on my shoulders..it was Lance,and i also recognised that Pikachu had long stopped uttering your name and was constantly looking at me,so i just suddenly was brought back to my senses and looking at Lance was just startled and didn't know what to say,in the mean time Noivern put the picture back and came beside me,i called him back but i had no words at all in my

head,then Lance very gently broke the silence
saying,in his words->

Lance : "Ash! you alright?"

Ash(stuttering) : "um..it's all right..i just..um.."

Lance(kind face) : "Lost in thoughts?"

Ash(thoughtfull) : "yeah i guess"

Lance : "Ash you've been standing like this for 15
minutes at least as i've entered here and was just
observing you and i left you here 15 minutes before that,so it must be 30 minutes there or there
about.Ash,the tears"

and then i suddenly realized i cried a lot and
quickly wiped off the tears and..

Ash : "um..no it's alright Lance..i just.."

Lance : "Ash, it's alright,i know her well,Misty
Waterflower,the yougest of four Waterflower sister from Cerulian City Gym and the current Gym
Leader of Cerulian

City was your first and constant travel companion
for 5 long years and then she returned to Cerulian
Gym and did brilliantly going into the Hall of Fame and she was also.."

I don't know Mist,but suddenly these past tense
words - "was,came,did,was"..became unbearable
to me and i burst out in a bit of choked but high
pitched voice-

Ash(bit choked,bit high pitched) : "Please,enough!"

Lance : "Ash.."

Ash : "um..sorry...but she's still alive and it just felt
a bit..um..well.. awkward,anyhow um..sorry for
shouting at you Lance..i'm terrib.."

Lance : "Ash,it's all right,you were wanting to know
more about Misty right?"

Ash : "Lance it's ok..i'll just ask someone else..your
responsibilities.."

Lance(firmly shrugging off) : "Ash,i know my
responsibilities and restrictions,i can tell you
about Misty Waterflower from Cerulian City Gym
and Frontier symbol all that i reliably and
personally know,but you must stay here tonight as
we have to finish with this,you've been absent
from the dinner for too long,you must comply with
me"..

see i took the chance because..please this is just
jokingly..i politely asked Lance if i could mouth the
press off and if i swore may he spare me,Lance
smiled and said that he himself will get rid of the
press and will finish the night as quickly as
possible and besides not much was left of
it..so,anyhow i couldn't thrash the vultures then
and there for their campaign to ruin my personal

life and helping my self illusion over my soulmate my sweet sweet Mist(tendering Misty,Misty
smiles and hugs Ash firmly)..and so again Lance saved himself and
vultures..thus it happened..then i just returned to
your picture and Noivern kept holding it and i kept

gazing at you,i did it just to recreate the moment
and Lance obliged"

Misty(blush a bit) : "um..Ash,i may again have to
face Lance personally very soon.."

Ash(smile) : "na,it's alright with him, your like his
second daughter or even younger i guess and he did treat me as his own son,
it's alright,but here you must bear with me again
as i want to contrast the reasons why other people
thought we're made for each other"

Misty(smile) : "ya,i would."

Ash(smile) : "alright,Lance told me as i was again
tendering the picture,that what you were upto with
your activities and overwork, suddenly turning on
the Frontier Symbol for pestering you and then
creating legal skirmish,besides if that brat is ever
seen again at Cerulian or anywhere in the world, i
would also absolutely love to battle him,but unlike you,i'll do illegally.."

Misty : "yes Ash,i had to,he was pestering me first
due to my name and fame and all that,then when
he got a rude awakening there he started name
calling and dragging my friends and family into it
and doing all that,so i had to take actions as all my
sisters supported me as well as Trace and all them and Professor Oak as well,Foster was always
beside me as well as Mr Slate so i got Pewter's support.. and we got rid of him from
there by means of a legal battle in his own den and while busting we found out he was
using illegal performance enhancers and all
that,so his water pokemons were added to
me,others went to different labs,well Gary
managed to take the 90% actually..haha..he was
extending the lab then so he began and actually it
was a good advertisement as well...anyhow that
was almost two years ago but you can continue
now"

Ash(tendering Misty's cheeks) : "No Mist,i
shouldn't have left you just like that to those vultures,not as a friend atleast...i never realized how
much monkey went around my sweet little flower since the day she returned and those m.. were
sentimental fools...it's just a friend's favour that i could've done cause during Unova i certainly
could've take care of all those damn brats and this was during Kalos when(laugh)..32 gyms
including 8 hall of fame totally fooled around left and right with distinct type disadvantages and
they were at full license and that sort of defeat would've given the brats the life lesson...No Mist
then i was your friend no matter what my formal friend title was,now this is different game totally
as i don't have any bounds now,just wait till i step foot in that place,they'll not be able to sleep for a
week with what i'm just going to tell them first day itself..i'm only getting started and now i know
i'm by being wholly Mistyvious(Misty smiles)..."

Misty(hugging Ash) : "Ash,it's all right you know,don't strain yourself i've forgotten all those now
that i've my soulmate..nothing matters now no matter what they do...just don't get so
anxious..but(laugh)..i know you're not going to stop atleast on the first day no matter what,what are
you gonna say..?"

Ash(laugh) : "the first thing after formal announcement where i'll show my power and give all that
to you showing what you are to me grossly so that the bufoons may know it'll be dangerous to
mingle with this Gym,then i'll just threaten them that if they still pester too much,i'll take up all that
power by virtue of my marriage and make Cerulian Badge a must win with 2 at a time(Misty

laughs),which means death to any legend as you know who'll start for me(Misty brusts into laughter) if this wasn't enough i'll change the gym into a fire gym all the while keeping all water pokemons and insinuate that my flying fire types are not getting free roaming,unleasing them on the damn city and there will be Charizard of all in lead(Misty laughs) with all those water types and all and if still they don't budge i'll set a herd of Gangers upon the city that simply means they'll die from either laughter or insomnia(Misty laughs loudly)..and all these will be supplimented with trash talking where anything they do will be proved as an insinuation that they're trying to harm the gym and abuse pokemons and if all this didn't stop them my final word is that the gym will be shifted as and open ocean challenge with ghost pokemons(Misty brusts into laughter)..no lened will ever be seen anywhere around the world with Ganger taking charge and Golduck,Feraligator and Crawdaunt lurking underneeth with a heard of ghosts(Misty laughs)...the vultures must understand the fact that the Universal Water Empress has her travelling companion with her,who isn't exactly as sweet as her.."

Misty(smiles) : "God bless Cerulian(both laughs)..anyway shouldn't we continue?"

Ash(smile) : "right,and that's exactly why i'm being so severe upon first here and then later there My flower has been abused and will again be so but i'm going to threaten them to death that if such is the case they'll see all possible hells imaginable(Misty laughs and shakes her head)...or even better why don't you yourself use Crawdauntogator with Kingler(Misty brusts into laughter)..they'll listen if i tell them and Feraligator knows you very well and does Kingler whoose their disciple(Misty laughs)...just tell them to have fun and enjoy the fun with them,i'll see which legend can win a badge from there(Misty brusts into laughter).."

Misty(smile) : "Gym leader's life is nasty Ash,but(laugh) when you step in..(both laughs)..may God save all eternally(both brusts into laughter)...and i guess the electricity department is handled by Ganger(Ash nods and both brusts into laughter)..."

Ash(laughing) : "Dark Night:Cerulian Challenger Version(both laughs),yeah to Ganger the open desart under mid day sun is Dark Night:Constant Light Version(both brusts into laughter)...anyhow, lets reminisce,shall we?"

Misty(laugh) : "Dark Night:Approaching Dawn Version"(both laughs)...

Ash(smile) : "right,so Lance told the stories and all about

you and your recent problems,i almost instantly

knew that all you were doing was only longing to see me and was entrapped in a golden cage with the huge

responsibility of polishing it everyday,so you finally

resorted to your pokemons and gym and frontier

and all else and it did get you in Hall of Fame but

you weren't all right and then those stuffs..by the way this is huge news and i forgot but just a thing

Mist,would you mind if i have to mention any of those 3 forsaken names cause i can't otherwise

properly describe their activities to you but i'll try not to mention them more than once or twice.."

Misty(hugging Ash very firmly) : "adore your soulmate"

Ash(smile,hugging Misty very firmly) : "always as usual,right,so this brat Green met me in

Unova Elite 4,my first,and was trying to imply that

if i ever had any special relationship with Pewter

City gym leader before as he recently met Kane

Slate and he spoke about me and he was a friend

of Foster but was away for a long time,he told me

he won the Orange and Kanto titles and was a big

fan of mine,he's 30 now same age as Gary,I just

complemented him for his success saying i

myself couldn't win Kanto and all and said yes

Pewter was my first gym ever and Kane Slate did

help me a lot on that day and the Gym leader

himself was very kind and gave me the badge only

on faith that i'll get better as none of my then 3
Pokemons were anywhere near his Pokémons in
competition...but I said i forgot whether it was
Kane Slate or one of his sons that were the actual gym leader then and yes it was 16 years ago and
i've never been in Pewter since then so just can't
recall the gym leader's name and Mr Slate himself tendered and advised me like his own son and
yes i remember him and recently has come into touch with Foster,the current leader there for
professional reasons but it's just my insignificant gratitude to them who basically kickstarted my
career..so
then i saw Green's face was sort of extremely puzzled
as if he didn't expect this humility from me with the name that i had and obviously how he was
taught by Brock of all anyhow..this humility to a
random stranger like him that too given my
reputation..so just kinda felt awkward but smartly
just spoke about pokemon this that,his few
experiences and I was happy it was about 10
minutes good chat but i felt that he's there to say
something else but just was totally flustered at my
humility on the very first point...so i tried to break the ice saying from
why he has come if there's any urgency from
somewhere else if it is he can say without any hesitation etc..
he kinda stammered and said he was from Orange
Elite4 and as he was a 2 time champion and
himself got an Orange League he got a big job there,well which he's actually doing only now
anyway and they want me to take over in a top post there
in Orange Elite4 so i said alright i know Lance
himself personally and through him i'll learn the matter..then he was hesitant and said he actually
wanted to know if i'll go to Orange or Kanto next
then they could've discussed it cause there's
some problems regarding Pokemons in Orange
some theft and some legendary pokemons have
been spotted and thus as i was on the Team
Rocket bust up,may be somehow i might
help even if by wisdom simply not by being present at the spot...now this gave me a real jolt cause i
knew
more than anyone that Team Rocket 2 was an
impossibility as the Kalos case involving me
finished 9 months ago and Team Rocket boss just
became my pet after Crawdauntogator pulled their
tricks on him and made him absolutely bewildered
and he admitted to me he can't imagine such a
thing and he sais another Team Rocket 2 as long
as I'm alive is simply meaningless cause what my such
two common pokemons done in such a way and they would've beaten even if
he had his Mewtwo and Arceus along with all else that day...and later too
Sinnoh Elite4 is my absolute pets as the busting
was there,i won there so miraculously and
Laura,you remember her,was very fond of me...and Laura passes away around 2 months after I
started Kalos but she after knowing the Team
Rocket thing just one day told me through a souce
that i'm the a huge legend as a Pokemon Master
and she herself said she couldn't imagine that

battle and said if i continue i might become Once
Only cause that was great then just blessed me
and all..i have huge respect for her and i just
replied that my gratitude that i'll no matter what
ever remain her grandson in all aspects and that's
all...so Sinnoh Elite4 would do anything i want
them to and Lance knows me since we were in
Jhoto and he'll surely tell me..so i got very
suspicious as to what his motive was so i held
him up and rang Lance and so that he wasn't the
messenger from Orange Elite4 and i just politely
asked him that why was he so desperate to meet
me and try to insinuate something to me being a
good enough Pokemon trainer having won Orange
and Kanto League which is a rare achivement in itself,why was he after me and then
he stammered a bit and then i pressed him for his hometown address as i had a feeling it was a
personal matter and he was trying to somehow threaten me of all but just didn't know how to
achieve it,he had to admit that he was
from Cerulian,as soon as i heard that name i told
him there's no need to pull such stunts on me i've
not yet won a single Elite 4,winning only 6 leagues so i'm busy
and threatened him that if he pesters me further,i'll
personally love to battle him and snatch away his
Orange League trophy cause mine just got a bit
old and i'll do all this by means of pokemon
battling,to which he cringed but still being a Two
League Champion he felt humiliated and just
agreed to battle me,but I said i would only after the
Elite 4 match but Green got a bit awestruck then by my determination but
was still willing to battle simply as he was confident having won knato recently and i myself told
him i couldn't win it so he thought there could be chinks in the armour,and i have big respect for
him as he
reminded me of myself but just before we started
i trash talked him in the press without naming just to show what he was up against
which got him angry and he was about to get
physically involved with me,which created tension
as he was well known himself but somehow we
managed to cover it up but most importantly the kid should've realized that my Pikachu who is a
world dreaded name needs only one mental signal from me to kill each and any including humans
in case of physical confrontation at their presence and that's why i don't get involved at all cause
mu bunch will create a massacar then and especially chu-bro,i'll able to stop all except him cause
he's not going to see me die in front of him because of another human or pokemon and this also
includes mom and now you too as he has already picked up my signal and that's why he suddenly
woke up then as i got excited,he knows i have Ganger and all and mom has Mime but he's not sure
whether you have any pokemons or not with you and he knew my agitation is may be because you
don't have any pokemons and he doesn't know whether my bunch or Mime will obey you or not
and he can't read you so was waiting for me to direct him to protect you and only when i calmed
down did he go to sleep again..so he's a big bro to you too(both smile)..”
Misty(smile,looking at Pikachu and then Ash) : “really since day one Ash,realizes our bond so
well..impossible intelligence,perception and reading..so happy having the big chu bro(both smile)..”
Ash : “right,so back to the brats,then i told him personally that listen mate,just tell me the reason for
your desparation and obsession with me i feel

physically threatened compelling me to take legal actions against him and i even said i have a doubt whether he won his leagues fairly or not and himself trying to create a Team Rocket 2 and want me there to which he was infuriated and said to look up who he was which is from there his things were known and then he was still saying things to which i said just spit it out, and he finally said that i mingled with his girlfriend, but as soon as he said that i myself told him if she was still his girlfriend and has been with me then just forget her and save himself and that its not my fault that people like him or his girlfriend would throw themselves at my door..which rather infuriated him to maximum which i wanted and he threatened me that if i wasn't a coward then he'll like to meet me privately just before the final matchday for a one on one..i politely said i'll oblige but if i feel a physical threat, i won't mercy anybody present and they'll be handed over to the Elite4..so he was pushed back a bit but being a 2 league champ thought why not and he had an emotional drive...Mist, i respect the man still and that's why i told you what i told you about him...(tendering Misty)..sweety, I was who I was then and he of all certainly knew it but still was man enough to face me directly atleast..he was a man not an en.. like these m.. and that's all i want to know cause i might've done the same thing in his position...(hugging Misty firmly, Misty hugs Ash firmly and keeps her head on chest)..but the kid made the mistake of thinking his emotion can topple me of all who has made fun of a man who managed a Mewtwo for 6 years and a Arceus for 2 and combined 2 years and was doing everything illegal imaginable against me yet i just laughed him off literally with two most common Pokemons against like 20 or 40 type advantages swollen up illegally and all at the same time intruding..and all that being 2 years back before i got through Kalos...that was his mistake despite my many warnings...anyhow, he chooses Slobro and I had Kingler that day, i told Kingler to just have fun as usual and Kingler did what she did as she decimated Slobro playfully within 2 minutes, Slobro herself just quitted and it was all fun for her not a defeat, which is exactly what my bunch is all about...so he got bamboozled as did the great boss 2 years back and then the press found out and his identity and created a fuss but i suppressed his name and got it changed so he had been grateful to me and just shook my hands i told him i was only proud to see a real man like him who atleast was man enough to stand up against me of all for his girlfriend's dignity and said i feel more proud to be from near Cerulian and such men were there, i said his girlfriend was in safe hands and wished him luck but just told him not to get too emotional and lose it when it matters cause people at my position are well known to all Elite4's and he

certainly doesn't want to attract their wrath...he almost cried and said it was his fault,he just didn't understand the situation and thanked me in all imaginable ways and left,but he made me more screwed up after the Serena fiasco months apart cause I soon realized a two time Champ from Cerulian chases after someone like me,the girlfriend is none other than Cerulian Gym leader so i got extremely angry and frustrated that why would that after 3 years still disturb me with in my subconscious feeling that well she did get one and then only dumped me and then i said well this can be fun,and just about truly started my antics.. (hugging Misty very firmly,smile)...sweety,if i only realized what you were going through since the break-up,i would've abducted you after my Undercover itself(smile,tendering Misty's cheeks)..i want my souly sweet Mist to always beam...now sweety,please..."

Misty(bit of tears, hugging Ash very firmly,smile) :

"that brat came back and said...(crying)"

Ash(smile,hugging Misty firmly) : "sweety,you're Misty Ketchum now..and souly mine"

Misty(smile,tears,hugging Ash very firmly) :

"yes,i'm souly with my Ash...anyhow,that damn brat reports me that if the brat was me the brat would've never left you and so on,i just kicked the damn brat out and got very depressed as i thought.."

Ash(smile) : "i know what you thought that thought has never been never will and in present never is...Misty is Ash and Ash is Misty, that's it"

Misty(smile) : "yeah,so i was so angry cause i recalled your behaviour,how you treated me and how these sludges...that really made me depressed cause i wanted to forget you even more forcefully..only for you to soul ne up(smile,Ash and Misty keep hugging each other firmly for a few moments)...Ash,but i didn't know that sludge pestered around like that,(smile and frown)you're pretty true about Cerulian..

Ash(laugh) :

"well they already has seen the preview yesterday(both alugh)..except for my flower there's nothing good there in that damn city and just last night they proved me right again,and my flower was accidentally there,it could've been Viridian,it could've been Venus as well,Cerulian"

Misty(laugh) : "sorry Ash,but i just love it how you hate my hometown with a particular passion,but you never did before"

Ash(irritated) : "no cause i didn't fully comprehend my cherished flower and thought it would be just like any City,but since then and especially since now as i now know first hand their infatuation with Sensational

Sisters and that damn Gym,that was your sweat and more tears and i was the tears and they took it for granted,I can't but be delighted now to go there and perform PROPERLY on OFFICIAL INVITATION,and no even last evening i wasn't

bothered but then they created a fuss there in the
 shop as soon as they tried to insinuate about my relations to all the sisters,they owe a big
 performance from me and it'll
 be in the local press where i finally will get my
 hands at precious Cerulian pests"
 Misty(laugh) : "anyway it's my hometown,just
 spare it a thought before you reign havoc there"
 Ash(smile) : "sorry Mist,but on this one i can't give
 you any guarantees nor can the Crawdauntogator(both laugh) but as i'll have to also be in
 that godforsaken place myself i'll spare the
 Gym..you'll know that i praised the leader to
 heaven and demoted the support cast at the same
 Gym to hell,and i'll spare this one.."

Misty(laugh) : "much appreciated,now continue"
 Ash(smile) : "yes,then Lance told me that Misty
 Waterflower is a famous name throughout Kanto,Jhoto,Orange and Hoenn
 and other places may be as well and that my teenage travel companion Misty and Misty
 Waterflower,Cerulian Gym leader were two very
 different persons as if i didn't know it already,he i
 guess thought i had a teenage crush kinda thing
 rekindled and probably didn't forget her and due to
 your condition he thought if he could help..(laugh)..
 I don't get this infatuation of people not letting a
 person be happy AND single.."

Misty(solemn) : "Ash,i wasn't happy at all,that was
 the whole reason why things started"
 Ash : "yeah a mess that almost defeated me had it
 not been for that day there..anyhow,he went on
 and told me about your present state a bit and
 then i said i'll agree that i'll help,to which i said
 indeed if such is the case i'll be very happy to help
 my long lost dear friend,which he also agreed but
 then despite knowing my abilities and Team Rocket history tried to advise
 me which i'm always blessed to be bestown upon EXCEPT when it comes to my sweet flower and
 they he said that you have picked up a bit of a bad name
 and they suspect you have made your hands dirty especially just after getting the Hall of Fame entry
 with illegal business,as soon as he said illegal,i
 scoffed that i helped busting team rocket and i've had enough experience with illegal things which
 he said he just cautioned me because he thought i
 liked that picture but i might get a rude
 awakening,i politely said if he gives me other protections that just lets me to mingle with the press
 there and do my things and fool around without those brats from police,i'll do my maximum but i
 said please i don't want
 to hear a word more on the past,present or future
 Misty Waterflower and I don't like anybody telling
 me anything about my very long time teenage
 friends and travelling partners of all alongside whom i
 escaped so many deaths and lived multiple many
 lives-no matter what they've become now,i'd like to
 not hear it..so then i set things up with
 Lance,came out for the first week gauged the whole situation around you..and yeah this time i got
 all those 3 brats via sources from Jhoto and Sinnoh Elite4 who scared them to death and they

confessed what sins they committed but as luck may have it didn't try to mingle me and especially that brat who went to check upon me as he perfectly realized that i can't be stopped at all by any Elite4 sources given what my pokemons can do so thus i gathered all your informations except the details on those stuffs which i took away along with your diaries and a few thing Sarah of all told as my sources threatened her unless she budged and that too without telling you,the gym will very next day get red flagged,so they did what they did,but then i needed to confirm my realizations for which i went back to Kalos secretly then once i knew the answer is yes,and then on third finally returned home after departing for Undercover 4 years back..and i gauged the moods of the great venerable legends here and as well as in Viridian to have a look at their still ignorance which i also decided to mouth off if only i got my sweet Mist flower back and i planned on what i shall do then the next week i just jumped upon you(both laugh) and finally i've become one with my sweet sweet Mist flower(both smile at each other),but the biggest thing was my infighting which you just had to participate in otherwise it would've made no sense at all and i also did in viseversa and before that i handcuffed you(smile,holding Misty's hands and immitating,Misty laughs and)..and Mist,you were so so sweet that day itself(Misty laughs) that i barely managed not to hug you to death and abduct you(smile,Misty smiles and tenders Ash's cheeks),from then on i knew i've got you back 50%,full from my part,and the rest depends upon you,but that was the hardest part and as soon as i linked you,you completely broke down which proved what your heart was all along then i attacked your body to get this idea of physicality out then i jumped upon your mental systems as to what is you and what is your then i did the hell rounds and then again told you you should definitely date only a certain stranger(both laughs)...then i fooled around with words and all even after you thought i was confessing(both laugh)..and finally when you just frowns and sentimentally said i'm sitting here too tired to repeat things do it yourself(both laughs and tender each other)...then i souled you(both smile at and tender each other)..which well(both laugh)..as usual(both smile)..so yes, that's how i came back.."

Misty(clap and smile) : "Bravo,no first you abducted me second we married third we had to pass a sleepless first night due to hoot-hoots..(laugh)"

Ash(laugh) : "see vulture is a better word"

Misty(smirk) : "Its vulpic,only that you're not allowed to use it"

Ash(smile) : "right(phone rings Violet),Vulture Time(shows phone,brusts into laughter,Misty shakes her head again laughing)

Ash: "No Mist,go help Mom or take rest here,just want to play a bit with our Viol flower,no its ok she'll be fine Brock has become absolute pet(both laugh),i'm talking all day since yesterday noon,let me get this,later if she wants you can"

Misty(tendering Ash's cheeks) : "don't threaten her,she'll go full mantyke(both laugh) and don't take too much strain"

Ash(smile) : "hellow,Mrs. Violet Waterflower

Slate,it's a truely great honour to be able to speak to you,how may an insignificant being like me come into your any service?"

Violet(emotional) : "um..Ash,Brock.."

Ash(laugh) : "dear Violet,i just told him that i also was suffering as much for Mist,but wasn't sure and the papers about whoose antics you know infinitely more than me"

Violet(crying) : "Ash,it was amusing what Brock

told me that you said,i should've been there as well.."

Ash(laugh) : "it's ok Violet,you know all of it anyway but still if i somehow have come to your service ythen our another Violet-like performance is enough for my consolation if i was ever rude to you or Brock or to anyone here.please take care don't get emotional,it's ok,your my sister-in-law now,we'll have ample time to discuss anything you want...please give your best in your performances without any worries we all are here just do what you do the best"

Violet(sobbing,smile) : "yeah,um..thanks Ash,i'll have to go now,will call Mist as soon as i can take care.."

Ash(smile) : "yeah take care Violet and take your time,best wishes"

.....(Misty and Delia downstairs)...

Delia : "dear,you look a bit worn out.."

Misty(smile) : "um..no just too much talking,i'm habituated though,Gyms are hard places.."

Delia(points out Misty's ring) : "so happy,Mist,your officially Ketchum now.."

Misty(giggle) : "thanks Mom.."

Delia : "did he fetch that before.."

Misty(bit ashamed) : "yes,Mom that's what he did"

Delia(bit concerned) : "he has changed completely in these 4 years,too playful and carefree and his language is a bit abstruse but isn't polite at all i can sense.."

Misty(laughing) : "um..sorry mom for laughing,um..as you said is exactly true about his language but he's just a bit rough with all that has happened to him in 4 years..he's just a bit tired but won't stop working"

Delia(concerned) : "well,he surely knows how to scare people"

Misty(smile) : "that i have to agree with"

Delia(smile) : "Mist,when are you going out today?"

Misty : "um..you mean date?"

Delia(smile) : "right."

Misty(nervously) : "well..we haven't decided on that yet.."

Delia(frown) : "Mist,is everything all right,you can and infact should be frank you know.."

Misty(laugh) : "i'm sorry mom for laughing,but don't worry at all,he's as sweet as ever,just a bit tired,you know the press hasn't been kind to him,so he still just thinks that he has to logically validate every moment of his life and give it step by step in a logical manner to anybody and everybody concerned in a rather colourful way and this whole process in his mind will give the press a good beat-down whom he refers to as Vulture(laugh)..um,sorry.."

Delia(smile and concerned) : "no it's ok Mist i understand..i see,no my little Ash never could do anybody any harm but i guess you should get this trash talking checked,it's not at all good"

Misty(smile) : "i'm being right at it but it'll take time,he had just been living a lonely life,it'll just take hime some time to come into terms with his

new surroundings"

Delia(smile) : "but enough about him,how are you,my little doll?"

Misty(giggle) : "fine mom,just fine"

Delia(looking at Misty's ring holding her hand) :
"very beautiful.but Mist,you should take rest as well,you yourself weren't in a good health and much emotion overnight.."

Misty(smile) : "i'm fine mom,i've had too many sleepless nights because of the Gym and other things,i'm habituated like that for the past 12 years,rather last night was the best sleepless night till date"

Delia(smile) : "happy to know my little doll,but um..Ash might also not be prepared to take you out as he thinks that the press.."

Misty(laugh) : "um..sorry for laughing mom,but it's just the effects of his antics throughout the night..i've been entertained beyond imagination,but no he has refused to take me out on a date or to dance or giving me a flower bouquet-refusal in all accounts"

Delia(very concerned) : "my God!..what's the matter.."

Misty(laughing) : "he would rather run away with me to unknown destinations"

Delia(smile) : "too much imagination(Misty bursts into laughter),besides Mist,he's fine at home."

Misty(smile) : "mom,its just that press bug that's bitten him for such a long time and to such an extent,he just can't yet get over it,so thats his definition of complete solitude"

Ash(outside) : "Mom,food,and overwork that little Mimey of yours, don't let my Mist work,she's...um,i just want her with me here right now"

Delia(smile) : "also my Mist too,remember that,and leave Mimey alone"

Ash(irritated) : "mom,please,but,if you don't allow me to um..well..gaze at my Mist all i want from..um.. close quarters,then i'll get Mime to battle,there you little brat.."

Delia(frown) : "Ash, that's impolite,and leave Mimey right now."

Ash(wrestling with Mime,comes near) : "Mime is pestering me ever since..why you little brat, you're no good for..mom where's my food?"

Misty(surprized) : "where are you going?"

Delia(taking Mime away,scowl&frown) : "Ash wait there in the table,Mist will take your foods there,and don't runaway with Mist so quickly(laugh)"

Ash(dissapointed) : "yeah,so you've also decided that i should be away from Mist.."

Delia(frown,comes to Ash) : "what's wrong with you honey?calm down, your always too agitated,too active all the time,Mist is coming,let her prepare the dishes.."

Ash(irritated,sitting) : "Mist come quickly,and why can't Mime prepare the dishes and no i'm a bit excited and yes,i'm going to the farm"

Delia(frown) : "Ash,just wait here be calm honey,i've got to ask you something"

Misty (comes with dishes) : "here are the..(Ash tries to take off the dishes and hug Misty)

Ash,what are you.."

Delia(frown) : "Ash.."

Ash(hugging Misty firmly) : "..that's what i wanted,no going a bit later.."

Misty(scoffs) : "Ash,mom is here its rude!"

Ash(hugging Misty firmly) : "no if only you hug me back,i'll not say a thing while i'm at the table,and mom being here makes no difference, it's not a vulgar st.."

Misty(hugging Ash quickly,then scoffing) : "that's it.Ash,are you out of your mind?calm down,don't make a fuss"

Ash(sitting down) : "no i'm done,will eat very slowly and sorry mom and Silence"

Delia(frown) : "Misty,just sit down honey"

Misty : "yeah,just these things.."

(finally everyone sits down)

Delia(observing Ash) "Mist,can you tell me something,I don't know much about training and battling but i do know Mimey through and through,what is wrong with Ash?"

Ash(scowl) : "Mom your not insin..um..suggesting that.."

Misty(angry,shouts and scoffs) : "Ash!just eat silently!"

Delia(very concerned) : "Mist,please,why is he behaving like this,and no it's not just now since the day he has returned,he's been like that,Mimey's too excited all the time and wants to play around so does Ganger and those two,Pikachu seems pretty indifferent to Ash,what is it?these Dark Types aren't good Ash,you know.."

Misty(smile) : "mom,please calm down i'll explain everything..no Ash,not you and you're not leaving till i'm finished,Pikachu,come to

Misty,baby(Pikachu jumps to Misty),right,and No Ash you're staying silent"

Delia(bit shivering voice) : "Mist.."

Misty(smile) : "Mom,we don't have anything to hide from you but it's a kind of a trade secret..he's a very special trainer and hence he's so important to the world.."

Ash(scoff) : "Mist is in.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash"

Ash(grim) : "very well,but mention yourself,she doesn't know"

Misty(frowns at Ash,back to Delia,smiling) :

"Mom,he has unbelievable powers over pokemons,he can instantly gauge them and if he so wants get attuned to their nerves and the whole combination then becomes very efficient in battling,and those like Mime,who've been with him for 17 years or so,and you know Mime too is a Psychic type thus can be extremely powerful if she wants to be-but just like she and Ganger,Noivern and Gerninja,Ash's nerve's state affects them a bit"

Delia(concerned) : "um..Mist,that doesn't seem to be a very good thing cause then the viseversa is true too,is it like an obsession?"

Misty(smile) : "exactly the opposite mom,Ash's own nature is getting reflected in Mime and all them

and as you rightly pointed out the viseversa and Pokemons,they are like what they are always playful,Pikachu is an exception due to his own temperament and he can't be automatically affected just by Ash's presence,he has to be be warmed up,so he's indifferent it seems and he's also able to catch Ash's nerve states independently,he's just irritated with him that he's always playfull and not battling anymore,Pikachu is a once only pokemon himself..see mom i myself have two such pokemons,one Golduck and a Gyarados and i can affect pokemons too but they won't show visible characteristics like this because my temperament is different to Ash and so are our pokemons and powers,i'll show you Golduck later, it's just trade secret as we call it, it's very seleted people in this world can do this successfully and this power might be abused as well thus the secrecy but the trainers at this level if comes naturally,like Ash has, automatically comes to know this,infact now our Pikachu alone is enough to mat some 50 other Pikachus who've won 4 leagues and 20 Pikachus who have won 6 or 7,like Ash has,Pikachu can alone face the whole Elite 4 and their Pikachus at one time and still has a very good chance of beating them,and i think i know,though he may still deny that Ash is the Only living Pokemon trainer in this world,that are at his level,he can hold sway over any opponents at will,there can be other pokemon trainers who has a special power over only his or one specific type of pokemons but Ash can do it to anybody and even hold his own againt legendaries,given he's mind is focused and he wants to face them,if Ash wishes he can even tame Legendary Pokemons for some times and even get them to battle for him,Ash is unmatched in terms of Mastery over Pokemons given he is focused and ready with a clear mind that really wants to battle or Master over a pokemon and

that's why he's so sought after. But with his natural sweetness (blush)..um..he doesn't want to battle or do extraordinary things and wants to play around like pokemons with his own pokemons and all other pokemons and even with all other human beings in general giving him the character that he is showing now (laugh)..um..sorry mom, but he is a unique being in this world as long as the very name Pokemon is concerned (smile)"

Ash : "and Mist is.."

Misty (frown) : "Ash, please, just stay silent"

Delia (bit flustered) : "um..well..i see but he must be lonely.."

Ash (bursting into laughter) : "umm..sorry, of course in a way he was lonely but now (smile) he has his flo (Misty frowns)..umm, but i'm married so it's ok, I HAVE MY MIST FLOWER (smirks at Misty who shakes her head) but when too lonely, which by the way i would if you or Mist don't bear with me and i don't get to hug my flower all i want (Misty frowns at Ash, Ash smirks)..and both of you don't bear with my now much beloved language which took 3 years of hard work to process (Delia and Misty sighs).. (smile)..yeah right, then i'll become more playfull and so would Mimey, so you see i have a deal.."

Misty (frown) : "Ash, stop that, don't talk like this with mom."

Ash (grim) : "but..i'm not harm.."

Delia (smile) : "no honey, you never can but are you not going to obey your mommy because your all powerfull now?"

Ash (blush, solemn) : "mom, what the..? you know what i'm.."

Delia (smile) : "absolutely honey, i do, just remember that press will not be after you unless you yourself wish them to and even if the press is around you still you don't have to give rigorous motives behind your each actions get it?"

Ash (grim, dissapointed) : "yes mom."

Delia : "are you dissapointed with that?"

Ash (beaming) : "nope."

Delia (smile) : "that's my sweet boy. by the way, and no not you Ash cause you won't have any control over your language as you're too excited, Mist will herself in detail say about her success with Pokemons"

Ash : "huh! then basically i should.."

Misty and Delia unison (smile) : "silence"

Ash (grim) : "fine"

Misty (smile) : "um, mom i've also been accepted into Water Gym Leader's hall of fame and like him i'm also among the top.."

Ash : "IS TOP"

Misty (frown) : "Ash, didn't we agree that you'll be silent?"

Delia(sternly) : "Ash, don't pester her(Ash and Misty laughs). say Mist"

Misty : "um..yeah,i'm also among the top water pokemon trainers and Gym leaders in Kanto"

Ash(whinning) : no i'll interrupt every time,she IS THE IN THE WORLD,no please Mist,bear with me,please.."

Delia(smile) : "ok Mist,i'll bear with his language,besides i must know what my little doll has done too(Misty blushes and smile),please Mist,this time, let's just bear with him together,but Ash,if you cross the line,i'll not listen to you for this entire day"

Ash(sticking his tounge out to Misty) : "yeah!"
(everyone brusts into laughter)

Ash(smile) : "Mist is currently THE TOPMOST water pokemon gym leader in THE WORLD but i'm having to add the dreaded term 'may be' as long as world is concerned as otherwise the vultures will insinuate that(Delia and Misty shake their heads)(smiling) yeah, that's my eloquence(Delia,Misty both laugh)...anyhow,the vultures will insinuate that there are 7 godd..um..sorry..7 regions in this world where things are vastly different,Cerulean,a name that i'm not too..(Misty frowns) dissapointed about(Misty laughs) as it's associated with my flower(Delia a bit puzzled,then smiles,Misty blushes),yeah the noun(pointing to Misty,Delia understands and smiles)being a seaside city-open ocean in fact-its kinda easy,kinda natural,kinda understandable,kinda taken for granted that the Gym,if there is one,will be a Water Pokemon gym and if Levender had a water pokemon Gym then suddenly to the vultures it becomes a problem that because the Geography is different,so is Pokemon and so the trainers are a bit different,bit varied,bit(Delia and Misty laughs)diversed,but i've been everywhere,i've never seen a 17 year old kid being able to handle a..um.. whatever Gyarados(Misty laughs shaking her head) to the extend where she made it like Mime is to you mom,at the age of 17 and that too withing 6 or 7 months after she alone had to tame it(Misty blushes)cause some godf..umm..she tamed it like you've with mime in 4 months and on 6th month attained a legendary status(Misty,blush,trying to stop Ash,Delia smiles),no i won't stop till i show the one only that you are(Misty blushes again)..her Gyarados could THEN use flamethrower as good as my Charizard can do NOW and it's 12 years and you know Charizard,i still can't beat her Gyarados one on one no matter how much i may cheat and she had all the power over it at the age of 17,and on that day if she challenged me,all of my then present pokemons including Pikachu(Pikachu wonders)would've abjectly lost not even giving Gyarados a mere scratch(Misty blushes and shakes her head,smiling)and that day Mist

looked so..um.. (Misty blushes after smirking at Ash, Delia smiles) looked gracious (Misty blushes) and beautifully-georgeous (Misty shakes her head Ash smirks at her, Delia laughs) and with mainly her Gyarados and absoluty single handedly turned a god..um..not so
reputed Gym of Cerulian to a legendary gym like far bigger than Viridian (Misty blushes, Delia pats Misty) has ever been or will be..yeah..but (frown) the godforsaken Cerulian vultures (Delia and Misty frowns)..no i'll say how they don't want to give my flower the crown that is only her's cause they're too egotistical to imagine it.. (Delia smiles and pats a blushing Misty)..those Cerulian buffoons who yesterday had the audacity to imply to me that i've deceitfully abducted Their flower, but the thing is that she's MY FLOWER (Misty turns her head down blushing, Delia smiles and hugs her) (smile) and the trouble was that they would rather clap her to death than to help her to stand and then they.."
Delia (sigh) : "Ash, it's about Mist, not your vultures.."
(Misty shakes her head)
Ash (smile) : "right, my dear little eternally sweet flower (Misty laughs shaking her head and Delia too laughs) can push her Gyarados now to a level which she told you about and then this Gyarados isn't her strongest Pokemon at all, it is Golduck and Dewgong and Starmie and Corsola and Clyster and Politoed and Tentacruel and so on, she had Starmie at like 3 year birthday present.."
Misty (blush, smile) : "5"
Ash (smile) : "right, 5 year present, and there are many more, Mist can hold sway over any water pokemons including my own and i'll be beaten left, right and centre against her in any battle unless i use Pikachu as she is unbeatable by water, grass, flying, dark, fire, rock and psychic types (Misty again turns her head down blushing and Delia beams, cajoling Misty)..so the vultures finally were about to budge as they would've abjectly humiliated themselves otherwise but the hallowed Cerulian City for the love of God never bothered, they wanted more and more and everyday every hour there would be this damn arrogant brat who'd challenge only to show (Delia frowns and Misty laughs) that the brat was an once ever utter failure as a celebrated boy scout or shought after girl cheerleader (Delia scowls and Misty frowns)..no let me continue.. (both shake their heads)..but my flower still had to appease those brats by giving them a badge and fighting them which obviously didn't last even a second as they used Metapod against Gyarados (both Misty and Delia laughs)..which (beaming) i myself did in fact (all laughs), anyway still out of her generosity my flower gave them a badge and this badge they got will be the only ever in their god damn lives and thus my flower was getting drained more and more mentally and physically and all that the all

caring idiotic Cerulian might was doing was to cheer her slow death."

Delia(solemn) : "Mist,i heard you weren't well,but this really was too much.."

Misty(smile) : "mom,you know he's just exaggarating,i'm fine now,and no had he been there at this form of his(laugh)..um..sorry(Delia laughs)..(smile)..i wouldn't have needed to work or perform at all,money would've poured into the Gym simply by this rate of trash talking even with the wife and mother in this language(Delia shakes head,Ash laughs),long live the vultures Ash,really" (Misty and Delia brusts into laughter)

Ash(smile) : "good break,thanks for the refreshments Mist and especially sweet for me(Misty shakes her head),and this will be long" (Misty and Delia again brusts into laughter)

Ash(smile) : "then there was the king of brats in the neighbouring Frontier Symbol,which i'm just too tired to explain but mom remember the job offer that i rejected ? this is this Battle Frontier's gym.anyhow this brat conspiring with our well known Cerulian all-knowers, tried to defame my little flower there but then as i've told you,my flower is more than strong enough to topple any goddamn weed pretending to be trees,and so this frontier Symbol had to be put over upon my sweet sweet flower(Mist blushes),which she barely was able to manage as it's like two gyms in one building and you can understand the workload that my flower had to bear alone and then the Cerulian brats quadrupled with this double gym system(both laughs)and finally these idiots came with a new plan,they were sending...(solemn)..Mist this will become personal"

Misty(grim) : "Ash, just give it a break,would you?"

Delia(concerned) : "what did they do to my little doll Ash?"

Ash(solemn) : "Mist, you're seeing my moods but mom needs to know,though she doesn't believe it but still she mut've heard it the umpteenth time and therefore about us and especially you she has an idea.."

Delia(scoff) : "Ash,are you.."

Misty(sigh) : "not again,Ash,i'm not going to listen" (hugs Delia)"

Ash(solemn) : "Mom,you've taught me to be honest with myself first,you want to see that today?"

Delia(frown) : "i understand,yes,Mime,don't allow anyone in at any cost no matter who,Mist,dear you're too tired go to my room and have a nap..you too Pikachu just protect the house but don't go overboard(Mime and Pikachu leaves)Mist..no it's ok doll your're too tired.."

Ash(smile) : "Mom,just a minute..hold on..Mist,just a sec sweetie,won't you be able to bear with me?"

Misty(sigh) : "um..no it's ok mom,i'm alright.and Ash don't go overboard."

Delia(sternly) : "Ash don't.."

Ash(smile) : "please mom,just bear with me,she'll be more than fine,yes Mist you can put your head down on the table or lie there in the sofa,just make sure you hear our conversation clearly and cogitate as we did yesterday."

Misty(puts her head down) : "make it bearable"

Delia(frown) : "i see,(hugs Misty)..it's ok Mist your with you mom(Misty hugs Delia).."

Misty : "tell him not to repeat it again mom,whole night this is relaying with my sisters and all."

Delia(frowns at Ash,tendering Misty) : "Ash,you heard her and i'm telling you not to cross any limits as well.."

Ash(solemn) : "that's done mom."

Delia(frown) : "Mist is my child just like you and has been for 17 years in my mind no matter what and you know the best i don't have any reservations about her,but if you're so bent on proving your points to anyone,then say,but as Mist and i also said,this is the very last time you'll ever repeat this"

Ash(solemn) : "MOM,i got you.it's done as you say,mom.right,Mom you know about Serena and you also know i was kissed or(disdainfully) rather spat at from close distance(Delia frowns) accidentally in public,these were accidents and before them there was one kiss and that was the first for us both-me and Mist-that was the only time i did that on my own wish as her wish also matched mine on that day.Mist has ever cherished me almost from the first sight as have I and you know all of it,but..this is funny and please bear with me..then the vultures started to peek around me especially after the Sinnoh Miracle,as you know and no i didn't cheat on her but my ego swelled a bit too much and eventually we separated,the real fun starts now,so the Cerulian brats came up with a particular plan that now since my flower was a bit depressed and alone,these would circulate over and you know mom,the irony is that i wasn't there at all,i was in heaven,well according to vultures,anyhow,both she was mentally tortured beyond measures by the vultures and they were circling around me as well but while i could travel around she was confined to her gym and show which is a golden cage with the responsibility to polish it every damn day and thus vultures got a way bigger grip on her than they ever could have or will get over me,then you know we broke up and we took the same measure in different forms,she continued to withdraw herself,i continued to attack them..the only thing was that i was moving around so i in a way was in much more favourable condition,which um well...helped me to anticipate if anybody wanted to fall for me which she was NOT DOING,and to cut the long story short,you're seeing that except for my flower none did bear with me through THE hell

and you know exactly what hell i'm talking
about(Delia frowns,solemn)..she has been hearing
me spit this out to whoever that dared to
challenge me and my flower yesterday(Delia
frowns)-no it was Brock,Lillie and Daisy,all family-
got thrown at some choised logic mercilessly by
me,but it hurts her,no only Daisy,Tracy,Brock and Lillie got this, they're all family,so it's not that the
vultures can do anything about or with it...it's just to keep you informed what
did happen-yesterday i insulted Mist like i could
never dream myself and did that again and again
and again and again she came back with the hope
that we can reconcile.Mom,i've seen may
b..um,sorry,people but her devotion to me for no
reason since the age of 12 when she first had a gimplse of me till now for 17 years constant for
which she was on the verge of total destruction,this devotion made me submit to her and she will
go through any hell for me because of absolutely nothing,i didn't
speak with her very gently,i haven't done anything
good to her in 17 years,i broke-up and went away leaving he get tortuted beyond measures by all
and still she for some
reason won't ever leave me no matter who i was and
where i'm in whatever conditions may it be she come bac to me just for
no reason except that she cherishes me since that
very first meeting when both of us were 12.and that's exactly what she was ever even
after our breakup,when the Cerulian brats were
hovering around and after sometimes Mist just
couldn't take anymore and it shut herself up in her
room and only attending to pokemon ando verworking to the ultimate all the while burning
inside just for no reason but because i never came
back after i broke up and it turned into a severe
depression much to the joy of those brats and my
little flower was dying a slow and miserable death
all because she was hoping i'll come back
for only a moment someday,and finally i returned but yet tortured her
yesterday to every hell i could imagine but she
refused to let go off me but as soon as i smiled
and put a gentle hand over her shoulder you can
see the overnight change in her and this all she did
while she herself is a legend and infinitely many true great
men would die to be her but she was only ever
going to be mine.i've not ever been kind to her
except leaving her high and dry yet she is
stubbornly following me ever since she first saw
me and would do so no matter what..she has listened to what i've just told you throughout the night
and yesterday also for the umpteenth time and yet she
still agreed to go through that once again just now after
going completely sleepless last night hearing this same being repeated again and again,the reason is
because i
told her to bear with me and i told her i don't hide
anything from my mom,so she's bearing it now and will so too if i tell the same to the vultures no
matter the consequences and no matter how many time she will do the same
because i'm cherished to her and there's no other

reason at all.i stopped her going and your taking her away to your room just to give you the first hand experience of Mist and what she is all about.so if you ever heard anything that the vultures told through their lackey the media about me believe all of it was far less than what i was actually being,but as far as your daughter goes,you can as well treat it as a mere dust particle on the most precious once only jewel.i don't need to tell you and i won't tell you whether i reciprocate my flower's feelings for me to her or not or whether i truly were sitting or attracting attention with the hope that i can get whoever i want,and thus the all conquering Cerulian brats and their master the vultures has once again just abjectly failed in another of their great endeavours.but they'll be at it again but the only thing is that next time i'll be there too,anyhow, that's the story"

Delia(tendering Misty's head) : "good enough Ash,but this is the last time you said this and if it's not then.."

Misty(raising her head from the table,with a bit of tear) : "mom, that's Ash's power i was talking about(a bit shivering voice)am i wrong Ash?"

Ash : "no,you're not Mist!"

Delia(tendering Misty) : "ok let's leave and let him entertain his vultures all he wants"

Ash(laugh) : "mom,please i'll leave ,only if I can hug my flower um..the umpteenth time.."

Delia(tendering Misty) : "do it more than that,but.."

Ash(laugh) : "my power is that i'll trash talk people and tell them such bare truths that the honesty of me will connect with them and their pokemons if pokemons are involved,and then if i want i can extract any secret i want and in the battle it'll mean if you had Mimey and i came without any pokemons,10 such Mime's won't cop with me cause they'll want to play with me all the time and be my pokemon rather so what to speak if i have 84 best trained pokemons myself? thus i can make people tell the absolute truth cause i had to face it from close stare and this'll be if able to help you,you good,if not my bad.you,Mist or anyone else has the same powers but your temperaments are very different so may be you can never do what i'm upto,but those who think water pokemon trainers cant handle electeic types they may test Pikachu with Mist and that'll be their last sane day here..anyhow..i know many more things but my only weapon is that and you already know it as do Pikachu,Mime and so on,i took my flower through it,and my flower follows me no matter what i do to her so i had to pick her up from the forsaken Cerulian City's damn Gym and now has put here at my home.this is where i live,my flower now is my family.MISTY KETCHUM.the end."

Delia(smile) : "i get you,but your process is only good for vultures,and yes you may hug Mist now"

Ash(smile) : "right.(hugging Misty very firmly) there there
Mist,you want to hear the flower song again nowwhich was mine not Cerulian"
Misty(blush,hugging Ash quickly) : "later"
Ash(whinning,hugging Misty more firmly) : "um..no right now,um..mom.."
Delia(laugh,going away) : "have a nice time"
Ash(smile,hugging Misty firmly) : "right,this i've wanted to do for 17 years..my sweet sweet Mist.."
Misty(blushes,laugh) : "Ash.."

...(Mr Mime comes in)..
Ash(frown) : "which brat has the audacity?who's it?
Mr Mime : <Tracy>
Ash(irritated) : "For the Love of
God!Tracy!Tracy,Tracy,Tracy,Tracy,this name has
pestered me for 15 years whenever i'm with
my flower...i'm killing him today absolutely,Pikachu
thunder chair.."
Delia(comes,concerned) : "Ash.."
Misty(smile) : "Mom,he has to mean it..."
...(Pikachu doesn't allow Tracy to enter)...
Tracy : "um..Ash.."
Ash(hugging Misty) : "i'm busy with Mist,get off or
else.."
Tracy : "Ash,please it's Golduck
"Misty : "um..Ash i should go.."
Ash(frown) : "hold my hand and we both go..no nothing else that dumb bufoon.."
Delia(concerned) : "don't hit him"
Ash : "don't send Mime,i'll hit both then"
Delia(self) : "nah!had it not been for Mist,he
would've gone mad completely(smile) that's
actually what he is expressing to Mist..(smile).."
.....(outside)...
Misty(takes Golduck) : "thanks Trace.(leaves)"
Tracy : "Mi.."
Ash : "hey!hey you en.. Shut the f.. up!don't ever
call my wife, don't ever talk to her,don't ever pester
her, don't ever come anywhere near her,don't ever
look at her, don't ever.."
Tracy(laughing) : "Ash,man you need rest.."
Ash(smile) : "sweet sweet Trace,i need rest,right?"
Tracy(concerned) : "um..ok,i get it but you're only
making it more and more.."
Ash(scowl) : "tell me Trace why is it exactly that
the vultures aren't around here today?"
Tracy : "um..i'm leaving..(trying to flee) "
Delia(tendering Misty's head) : "good enough
Ash,but this is the last time you said this and if it's
not then.."

Misty(raising her head from the table,with a bit of tear) : "mom, that's Ash's power i was talking about(a bit shivering voice)am i wrong Ash?"

Ash : "no,you're not Mist!"

Delia(tendering Misty) : "ok let's leave and let him entertain his vultures all he wants"

Ash(laugh) : "mom,please i'll leave ,only if I can hug my flower once more,um twice..um thrice..

Delia(tendering Misty) : "do it as many times,but.."

Ash(sigh) : "my power is that i'll trash talk people and tell them such bare truths that the honesty of me will connect with them and their pokemons if pokemons are involved,and then if i want i can extract any secret i want and in the battle it'll mean if you had Mimey and i came without any pokemons,100 such Mime's won't cop with me cause they'll want to play with me all the time andbe my pokemon rather so what to speak if i have 84 pokemons myself? thus i can make people tell the absolute truth cause i had to face it from close stare and this'll be if able to help you,you good,if not my bad.Mist has the same powers but her temperaments is different so she can never do what i'm upto,and those who think water pokemon trainers cant handle electeic types they may test Pikachu with Mist and that'll be their last sane day here..anyhow..i know many more things but my only weapon is that and you already know it as do Pikachu,Mime and so on,i took my flower through it,and my flower follows me no matter what i do to her so i had to pick her up from the godforsaken Cerulian City's goddamn Gym and now has put here at my home.this is where i live,my flower now is my family.the end."

Delia(smile) : "i get you,but your process is only good for vultures,and yes hug Mist now"

Ash(smile) : "right.(hugging Misty) there there

Mist,you want to hear the flower song again nowwhich was mine not Cerulian"

Misty(blush,hugging Ash quickly) : "later"Ash(releases Noivern) : "right Trace stand in front of me,yeah here(recalls Noivern,Pikachu jumps onto Ash's lap)see Pikachu doesn't exactly like you..so it's better that you comply"

Tracy : "this is pure blackmailing.."

Ash(angry) : "you f.. shut the f.. up.who called me in the middle of the night to torment my already stressed Mist up even more.."

Tracy (smile) : "Ash,Misty will forgive me but you were.."

Ash(extremely angry) : "so when are you releasing my speech to international vul.."

Tracy(grim) : "Ash,please.."

Ash(angry) : "the silver screen,the radio,the tv,the internet,the gramophone,the godforsaken mobile.."

Tracy(laugh) : "we won't be able to express it in front of.."

Ash(angry) : "My wife?right?my wife?huh? what is exactly Trace that everyone is concerned suddenly so much about my wife,huh?what do you want? do you want to see whether she truly longs for me or not if i'm just going to choke.."

Tracy(solemn) : Ash,please,be patient"

Ash(bursts into anger,but not high pitch) : "No i won't,what can you do about it?what can any goddamn vulture do about it? the press,the cinema,the internet,the godforsaken Elite4,the roads.. s...,the most beautiful enu.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash get into the Hall of Fame formally and just don't get into farming."

Ash(grim) : "cause Misty..no,what is it that now you're so concerned about,huh,Trace?,no let me finish..what would my wife lose with those not being done? that's your point ain't it?"

Tracy : "Ash,Misty.."

Ash(frown) : "that's it.it's always been Ash AND Misty.that's it Ash and Misty. all rest like you en..were there and blah,blah,blah,beautiful b.. has come and gone,f.."

Tracy : "Ash,please spare these for another day,you're going to Cerulian or stay.."

Ash(frown) : "so your saying that according to the vultures,the husband should enjoy gay f.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,take rest and let me go please or talk about pokemons"

Ash(grim) : "no i'll talk about anything with you if only you don't drag Mist in and more importantly,what is it Trace huh?you want me to show you that my ge.."

Tracy(shout) : "Ash! please, don't torture yourself like this and..oh no.."

Ash(laugh) : "my wife? isn't it? my wife? why and how..no if you dare leave or stop me,i'll set you on Thunder Chair immediately...what is it that people are infatuated with Mist,huh?yes,she has a less black skin,yes she's less at bay with battles,yes she's less unfamiliar in hall of less mediocrity? and? i know what they're thinking but I can be brutal as well,you still can't..no i don't care and nobody comes anywhere near me if i'm home,else they know the result..get over the fact that how can a sweet flower like that wasn't picked up by someone other than me?" Tracy(sigh) : "Ash! could you doubt yourself if you heard those words in the middle of.."

Ash(laughing) : "words?"

Tracy : "exactly not Ash,that was your.."

Ash(angry) : "not this dumbnut again,ITS ME,not mine,and so now i've pulled off a stunning publicity stunt,on one side to blindfold the family

and on the hand hand to get all over the very next b.."

Tracy : "Ash,they are none except Misty for you."

Ash(laugh) : "so you've finally been able to get around the fact that if a Rhyhorn f.. someone else's sl.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,please,would you argue with me without these words?"

Ash(smile) : "most gladly"

Tracy(smile) : "well,same as yesterday,staring 1.what you see in Misty that you don't see in others?"..

Ash(angy) : "i'm warning you last time Trace,my Mist is not a selling product,if you areinsinuating..if anybody.. now that's it,from exactly this moment on,if,especially a half-grown en.. like you,manages two words with Mist,I won't be able to restrain myself but to personally make sure he that doesn't go home alive.."

Tracy : "Ash,this is your sketch..(hands over the sketch)"

Ash(looking at the Sketch) : "thanks

Trace.but..umm(bit shocked)hey(smile)hand me over the other ones,Trace"

Trace(taken aback) : "Ash"

Ash(smirk) : "Green,Rudy and Georgio and there's more,i'm personally going to erase all of those godforsaken names that you're hiding behind your fake smile.."

Tracy(forcefully hugging Ash) : "Ash,please for her,stop killing yourself like this slowly,she doesn't know the end result that you.."

Ash(laugh) : "for her?for her? Trace you tell me, except her sisters does she ever had anyone else? huh?no,no i need to understand this infatuationthat Brock has had atleast the courage to honesty present in front of me,and i'm as you know,would ever be most happy if i could atleast,atleast with my these own very hands killed just ONE vulture from a group who insinuates that i'm the BEST choice that my..no you've crossed limits(Ganger,Noivern,Geninja)Nivy(Forcefully),take Pikachu with you,(Very Sternly)Pikachu!buddy!tell professor Oak to send over all pokemons i've ever had and all those who wants to be present with me now..."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,stop him"

Ash(smile) : "(gently)see Pikachu,that he's a coward,(Pikachu is extremely Agitated as are the others,Ash tenders Pikachu,cajoles others,Mr Mime joins in,also agitated)just a sec Trace,just go in and(sternly) tell Mist and Mom,to not go to my room,i'm meeting you there,tell Mist,if you care for her so much,that i've ORDERED her to remain

downstairs(sternly)do as i say,i have to manage
my buddies,and cancel all your goddamnmeetings,tell Gary i'm not in a good mood,and.."

Delia(frown) : "Ash"

Ash(concerned) : "Mom i've never demanded
anything from you that you couldn't give me but if
you can please ride on Nivy and(Misty comes
out,with solemn Face and closely observes Ash
just for a few moments)Mist,dear this has to be
done you've heard me,I'm a Playboy, it's not easy
with my kind,besides(laugh) it's only my first
day,bare today,and no mom,i wont say things that i
promised i wouldn't and Mist,your're safe(sternly)
NOW.."

(Misty frowns at Tracy and then drags Delia to
Noivern)

Misty(whispering into Delia's Ears) : ""Mom! just a
false alarm,play along!"

Delia(stunned) : "but..ok"

Ash : "Pikachu,i'm fine buddy(sternly)go with
Mom,Mr Mime,calm down..no nothing will happen,
he's my friends only,Ganger stay alert,Mime,i want
all things to be precise,never disturb me and Tracyand Gerninja,go to my room,Pikachu obey mom
and Misty.come on Trace."

Misty(sternly) : "Trace,i've got Golduck back mind
that,and I won't lose my Ash and my heaven at any
cost,no mom it's ok,it happens we're as we were
saying,just a bit stressed,Pokemons are under fine
control,Ash,you want Starmie?"

Ash(smile) : "i'm fine Mist,its only Trace,just go
have your lunch,Trace will be held up here
today,just take care of Daisy,come on Trace..what
you're afraid of ME?ASH?No(sternly) Mime you
too GO to the LAB,NOW,Nivy don't lose track of
Mime.(sternly)ALL that are going FOLLOW MISTY
and MOM,absolutely.GO."

(Misty leaves with Delia,Noivern,Pikachu,Mr Mime)
(in Ash's Room,with only Gerninja,Ganger just
outside house door, invisible)

Tracy : "Ash,that was you ultimate urgency call.."

Ash(laugh) : "the most trivial false alarm and my
Mist picked it up just as she saw me, aren't we
forever a couple,Trace,Huh? What you think we'reBEST or RIGHT for each other only don't you?
(solemnly)Trace,Pikachu of all surely wouldn't
have spared himself if it really were a true
ultimatum and wouldn't have listened to even me
as that was my order..Trace my real Ultimatum is
that we fight till we die, individually that is,the
reason for that will not appear in this life of
Mine,UNLESS someone tried to be too interested
in 3 things-mom and her pokemons,any of my own
Pokemons or Mist and her pokemons,Pikachu
have already picked up the third and i never

needed to utter in words or repeat an assertion to him-and you shall by now know all of it,relax i know my bunch,Gerninja,stay sittid faceing the door and don't look back till i tell you to,right,you've created a mess Trace,no hand me your pokeballs(Marill,Syther)hellow,join Gerninja and do as she's doing till i tell you anything else,make sure door is locked(both comply)see Trace, your own pokemons will not obey you and i'm not even using any pokemon and Marill's beenyour for may be 20 or more years,you wanted to know why i'm the BEST,this is for the most trivial part-Ability"

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,i'm telling you,you speak all you want,i only supply infoes"

Ash(smile) : Trace,just hand over.."

Tracy(solemn) : "Ash,they had been thrown to the hottest fire a long long time ago"

Ash(smile) : "Trace tell me-are you afraid of me? do i look sinister or am i more like a playboy?no really tell me."

Tracy(sigh,hugs Ash) : "Ash,i know what your thinking as well,none can"

Ash(laugh,breaks embrace) : "be better than,right?"

Trace,why did you draw those in the first place,Trace you know what i know,and no it's just not trash talk but i can do it most politely too,i just love this,i call it the vulture style,i won't be alive would i if i don't do these?"

Tracy(solemn) : "you know Misty was our heart-throb,despite having you,you were never here,shechanged her sisters,she was ashtonishingly good with the gym,a true epitome of perfection in battles or performance-she was the ever sweet sister for Me and Gary and later Brock,when he was back,but Ash,this is your own home,if you want, especially now.."

Ash(laugh) : "so all you could do was to backstab me,right?"

Tracy(solemn) : "Ash,please,you know.."

Ash(solemn) : "i do know one thing surely.You know Trace in this very room i was telling Mist a few hours back the exact same thing,but before that do you want to know why i actually suddenly came back?"

Tracy : "Ash,you two were.."

Ash(smile) : "BEST,right?(laugh)Trace,stop it,please and don't interrupt me and listen.

(solemn)I came back cause of an event after my Kanto Elite4 was over,the dinner party at

night,there,something happened and i was

suddenly morally assigned to rescue the CerulianCity Gym Leader,had it been some other chances,

(grave)I wouldn't have ever returned (laugh)you can't imagine that i would ever accuse anyone

here of backstabbing,could you?Trace bear with me,(very angry)that's my definition for what you were upto.Tracec, I decided to take my bunch off from Oak Lab,be at Hoenn or Sinnoh,cause i just wanted to relax start a new life far away,with may be if by chance some na.. sl.. as you think i was doing since Unova and now that i wasn't keeping contacts i was doing even more so,(sternly) Trace,i know what was happening with each of your own personal lives and (very concerned) look at Me(forcefully shakes Tracy)I'm only happy and nothing else for the choices you or Gary or Brock or anybody has made..no,i do know,Trace,but don't interrupt me else the result won't be good and that's the final time i'm saying this...(sternly)Trace you know my current position and that in i wanted i could've got much better women than MISTY WATERFLOWER and if she wantershe could getmuch better men than ASH KETCHUM.. (sternly)i'll

set your own pokemons on you,if you're not listening with pinpoint mindfulness-i would've offered my mom to come,but it's her choice,i heard how Misty was doing before as you know the newses..(bit grave)my Mist was slowly DYING a very..anyhow,i paid no attention at all,but then i had to come back and then suddenly my feelings are rekindled and so are we and upto the point where i've even given a ring and she has made the BEST CHOICE,(smile)that's exactly the problem ain't it Trace,Ash Ketchum is suddenly back with Misty Waterflower and the vultures can't quite figure this one out or handle it,that too an overnight marriage-am i wrong Trace?"

Tracy(sigh): "Ash,no the past tense is gram.."

Ash(smile) : "Grammar,indeed,grammar.

(sternly)when Lance,who knew me when i was traveling with Misty Waterflower,whoose now the devil and i'm the supposed saviour and by the way it pains me to say,but i must,you travelled with mein Orange,did i bed anyone?no still i'm warning you

don't drag Mist's name ever into this, i won't ever be able to listen to anything like that about my Mist and this is about me,not her,mind that.i didn't bed around in upto Sinnoh,now tell me Trace because of my behaviour,and it was not right and i'll be the first to admit but in Unova i still hadn't broken up and that (sternly) means no matter how much even if i wanted to,i wouldn't bed around,but about the last Month of my then relationship with Misty or may be the last two weeks or hell may be the Last 5 day,but why 5 wjy not(extremely agitated) THE LAST DAY? Trace,i won't repeat this

question again and if you don't answer,you know what can happen to you..who was that f.. sinister b... that came out as i was entering the main lawn,i didn't recognize him or bother about him-he looked just like any ordinary man,but i you see can if i want i will find the b... out and his mentors and erase them by themselves withing next 30 to 40 hours by faking accidents and accidents,you know i had to be with team rocket,so i know these and would love to apply them even once and that too especially on those f..b..Trace,i'm hungry,really,i so,so want to meet those 3,so much,but i'm not greedy Trace..but i plead with you,Trace,please,please,Trace,give me the most beautiful b...,Trace,i beg of you..please.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Green"

Ash(broad smile) : "right! no i would and do and will forgive him everyday and you know why,i would even forgive Brock,i don't talk about Misty's family,they're free to go around and themselves had too much to deal with,Gary never mingled into this though he desparately wanted to,his professionalism won't allow him,but the single person i won't easily forgive is(pointing at Tracy,extremy concerned)-YOU."

Tracy(solemn) : "on the charge that i didn't do anything despite knowing full well what exactly was Misty's trouble?"

Ash(smile) : "you're that one brat that knew about our bond by heart from the very first day we met all those 15 years back,Trace,you'll always be her very own flesh and blood,the brother that she so much wanted beside her especially after she returned to the gym..what did she do?"

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,during Unova,when news started to pick up the steam,she would whenever find me alone,just sob - "give my Ash back,Trace,he can't stay without me",it continued for a bit and almost everyday you weren't there,something was happening..then um..we had given up on you and.."

Ash(very concerned) : "Trace,i didn't need Misty,neither did Misty need me,we could've moved on,we both were extremely successful in our careers and had everything at our plate,she reached that level way before i did,but you said you had given up on me,right?did she follow suit?"

Tracy : "no"

Ash(sternly) : "ever?"

Tracy : "she was puzzled all along till you broke into her room forcefully like.."Ash(sternly) : "i know what i did Trace,you tell me one thing that is I didn't need Misty anymore cause i had found a better life,THUS i had cast her off like a worn out tin can,was that the assumption?"

Tracy : "no"

Ash : "then it was just that i had sucked the life out of her for my neutrition and once i was famous i was done threw her away?this then?"

Tracy : "no"

Ash : "she was my childhood crush and on some glorious godforsaken day,i suddenly woke up from my teenage slumber,beaming with my youthful realization that Misty was JUST AN infatuation and along with the fact that me being so single minded in my career pursuits were only always a good friend but NOT BEYOND to all?"

Tracy : "um.. pretty close"

Ash(sternly) : "Trace,i'll ask you two questions,1.who broke up from whom?

2.why was this Green guy so interested in me?"Tracy(sigh) : "1.none of you broke up. 2.he understood the first."

Ash(brusts into laughter) : "so he went on that day to evsdrop on me but Misty wasn't in the mood to tolerate him,thus he couldn't help.Trace that's what infatuation is,Green was devoted to Misty because she was his dream,he finished Orange and is a very successful man,Mist just never cared about anyone but just like me would tolerate and that guy was never impolite to anybody.. beautiful man.. beautiful, beautiful man..beau.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,please,he was the first to admit his infatuation to us all as soon as he came back from meeting you and just left,Misty was confused all along and never knew what exactly to do or feel and this refusal turned her into the actual nerve wreck that she became that she finally thought she was close to erasing you off but just then you again came up with all your glories and she just decided to burn herself to a sinister end"Ash : "4 years-beautiful man.. beautiful man..that too when i was in bed every night in Kalos NOT alone.. beautiful man,beautiful man"

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,please stop torturing yourself like this"

Ash(sternly) : "Trace,if you try to stop.."

Tracy(sigh) : "carry on.."

Ash(closed eyes) : "beautiful man beautiful man,comes back from Orange after victory,meets his crush,then understands that he may have a chance but then isn't sure of himself,then moves around back and forth but can't get a hang of it,in the meantime two other man come around similar vein almost but not sure themselves-they were good but less beautiful,and all this due to Mist's utter confusion about everything surrounding her except Pokemons and the Cerulian Brats were

constantly pressuring for more,Lillie and Daisy just found their lives and only could be beside her all the time but similarly confused as to what should be done and Violet being Violet-just don't understand anything except her own performances and is so happy to stay just as that,i'm so glad that Brock of all people rescued her,though that brat has a long road left to be travelled with ME..they all really are sensational,really generally such pure souls are not found anywhere and no matter how much dust they catch,they're never ever tainted and none more than you 3 know that but then you thought that this is family and some men were nice and so on..and the men, beautiful man, beautiful man, beautiful man..But all this had to be in a godforsaken city like..anyhow(opening eyes,very sternly and harshly)still i haven't got my answer"

Tracy(sigh) : "if you already know what is was.."

Ash(smile) : "i'm hungry Trace,i'm hungry,
(growls)don't dare interrupting me"

Tracy(sigh) : "go on"

Ash(smile) : "sweet,sweet Trace,as my flower went to that true f.. of a gym,she was shoved down a bunch of confusions and so was struggling,thenyou were called there, didn't you?no i,sweet Ash of Pallet knew but(growl) I,ASH KETCHUM, MASTER PLAYBOY, DEMAND TO KNOW..(sweetly) what did you see?"

Tracy : "she was a miracle worker"

Ash(smile) : "WAS?"

Tracy(sigh) : "AS ALWAYS FOREVER"

Ash(smile) : "right.(scowl)why were those brats entertained?"

Tracy : "um..Ash, it's.."

Ash(growl) : "don't dare utter my flower's name,you'll not go out ever from here alive or dead."

Tracy(sigh) : "fine,fine,its an eventuality and you know very well who i am"

Ash(smile) : "sweet,sweet Trace,was there ever any doubt throughout timeline?"

Tracy : "Unova,12th Badge,that night you said something."

Ash(smile) : "beautiful faces,right"

Tracy : "um.. without any contact before and afterfor 10 days,then when she asked,just scoffed at her"

Ash(smile) : "did she shout at me?"

Tracy : "um..no she cried to me"

Ash(smile) : "what you did that day did you do the same on the day we broke up?"

Tracy : "um..Das.."

Ash(smile) : "no need,the next time she spoke to you"

Tracy : "yeah i did"

Ash(close eyes) : "then suddenly i had to go undercover and nobody knew my whereabouts barring Elite4 in this whole goddamn world..then how did the thing got outside the godforsaken Cerulian Gym in the first place,sure it wasn't the beautiful man"

Tracy(solemn) : "can i tell you something?"

Ash(close eyes) : "most honoured"

Tracy : "you.."

Ash(shout) : "huh?what was that Trace?i wouldn't ever have reached the level had i always been withher and she even more so,thus i was using her and

then threw her away as soon i got what i got right?

Trace,confirm it,Trace,these Vultures are really in for a game RIGHT NOW,Trace I haven't battled in ages just fooling around,give me vultures Trace i'm hungry,i want to BATTLE,Trace please, wasn't this what the vultures are insinuating?"

Trace(sigh) : "you never realizes the full implications Ash,as soon as you're back,see all things are in a whisker back to what it should've been,4 years we all had our lives,it was as if the X factor wasn't there, you come back 14 days and you can see what happens,this is what happens you and Misty you two must be together all the time otherwise both your lives will not be right and neither would be that of the association"

Ash(smile) : "Tracy,just stop there,would you?,Tracy,please,(very sternly)I'm not finished,iknow what i know but i don't have my answer yet.and unless you give it, you're NOT going out of this room...then kanto Elite4 as they assigned me they said Misty was,Misty had,Misty did-Mist IS.mind that,and i told them that as well that day and they were rather unknown to me and its a month ago at most may be..and they haven't dared to use Past Tense..no it's not grammar,my problem is that i've yet to let her roam freely without me since i've married her yesterday,oh! i get you!you want to know why rush the marriage,may be Green could STILL return..is that the trouble? or is it that last night made an impression that Ash Ketchum was also the Acting Master and wants something out of this which i doubt,so you were happy,but it wasn't because of me,it wasn't because Mist it was because of,what was that name Trace?"

Tracy : "Ash,we all thought Green was the one,he was present that day but i never handed those over to anybody and thats how you know why ihad Daisy,she.."

Ash(smile) "sweet sweet Trace,don't give you personal cherished memories to a f.. like

me,besides hey i'm dumping Mist tonight only remember?"

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash.."

Ash(smile) : "Trace,i've just figured out what the vultures are getting at..no,don't try pulling any stunts Trace,you know best how great your Syther's blades are..(closed eyes)the Vultures now are trying to land on the Greatest Spot that has been accidentally opened,even more so after last night,this Trace is stupendous,mind blowing.. brilliantly chalked out..Trace,i can envisage them clearly,Trace,i can feel the simmering jubilation among them,so close to their victory,so much is the joy,so much the bliss from the hope that their impending victory is just about to come into fruition,Trace,i can see them around me,just about to grab that spot,their happiness so tangible to me Trace,Trace,answer me please,Trace,i beg of you,Is it possible that this time,this time once more(opens his eyes,smiling),that the vultures be successful in their insinuation that all that i said was emotion,all that i'm made of is emotion, (closed eyes)My heart wrenching longing for my own soul's different form,appearing before me in all glory off which all i ever wanted,want and will want is not to take my eyes off,not to take my eyes off from myself..(opens eyes) that all is emotion and for only a day,till i meet the roads.. s.. again,have a nice day?"

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,you don't.."

Ash(smile,closed eyes) : "no Trace,i have to,i'm a Playboy remember, it's not easy with my kind,please,let me share with you the joy of the Vultures that they're having now..(open eyes) i put Misty through an emotional roller coaster to weaken her off then jumped onto her and preyed upon her?"

Tracy(sigh) : "You don't have to validate yourself.."

Ash(smile) : "what was that Trace?"Tracy(deep breath) : "Ash stop logically validating your actions to us.."

Ash(smile) : "Actions" Trace? actions?

Tracy(sigh) : "we know you well enough you never have been able to hide the honesty that has made you into what you are and what you're feeling now we all know Ash, it's just..it pains us to see the strain you take upon yourself to narrate them because you think your Playboy image is what everybody believes in,Ash please,we should be talking about the celebrations.."

Ash(smile and closed eyes) : "no Trace don't stop,my image,Trace i'm a Playboy at heart and my honesty is a show,all that you hear,all that the Vultures insinuate on a moment to moment basis

is the real me,i'm not honest,i've cheated my entire life portraying this honesty,this veil so thick my pokemons can never open it nor even my mom,this veil has given me everything,and due to this veil i can take and throw away the Cerulian Heart-throb whenever i wish,i can get in and out of Hall of Fame at my will,i can hold sway over other people and their pokemons at my leasure, i don't have any feelings for Mist at all i just made her to believe me just like my mom just like everybody else,hell,i've made myself to believe that i'm "AN HONEST MAN"..Trace,this is,Trace so blissfull,this life of deceits,veils,you won't ever know what you truly are...so amusing..so amusing..beautiful, beautiful man, beautiful man..(open eyes) ain't it so Trace?"

Tracy(sigh) : "i've got nothing to say Ash but at this rate Misty will NOT have you alive in this body for long,if you want that just to prove that you'll still want her the only,best of luck with that,but if you die now unable to take anymore of this self inflicted torture,then you know too well what Misty will feel like and especially at this moment of her life,yes she will be wanting you but you could spare her the moment of sadness when doctors are going pronounce today afternoon that Ash Ketchum is no more among us..if you want that best wishes.and i demand you to let me out of this mess to go and tell Misty that you're time is very limited."

Ash(smile) : "Marill..no Trace,she's your pokemon,what would she do to you(Marill observes Tracy for a few Moments and Ash for a few,then silently returns to her place,Syther does the same)?Gerninja(comes up looks far more intensely in Tracy's eyes then returns to her place)..saw that Trace? don't try to leave before the conclusion of this beautiful game,this exquisite insinuation that that Vultures have come up with-what is it called in you book,what i'm doing with Marill?"

Tracy(sigh) : "phychothrombonosis"

Ash(Stern) : "Trace,what am i doing with you?"

Tracy(solemn) : "Lie Detecting"

Ash(rebukes) : "word carefully"

Tracy : "your reading my hidden secrets and hidden traits by self torturing yourself towards death"Ash(smile) : "what would i gain?"

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,all you've ever wanted was the Pokemon Master title,you were too clueless to even know what actually you had to do to get to the goal you had set yourself up for,then Misty,your very first travel companion,now your

wife.."

Ash(smile) : "sweet,sweet.."

Tracy(deep breath) : "so...um..Misty your forever travelling companion and wife came along and for a time being you wanted Misty.."

Ash(laugh) : "just a bit of a halt here,i wanted what?"

Tracy : "um..you had a feeling for Misty and the only thing that was ever obvious about her is that she has been wanting you so intensely since the day she saw you for the very first time and she never spares herself in her longing for you..and now finally has you beside her permanently for atleast once in life,unless you want to again state that the Vultures are insinuating that thistogetherness is an hindrence for you two to see how much you two actually want each other and rigourously try to disprove them killing yourself right before her eyes"

Ash(smile) : "Tracy,what did i want?"

Tracy(deep sigh) : "The Title"

Ash(smile) : "Only?"

Tracy : "Only."

Ash(smile) : "What do i want?"

Tracy : "Mi..no..um,you actually don't want anything..you have.."

Ash(smile) : "what do i have?"

Tracy : "Misty"

Ash(smile) : "and?"

Tracy : "your mom,pokemons and Misty thats all..oh and yes,you yourself"

Ash(smile) : "my endeavours recently,why have i done what i've done with Misty and my endeavours in my whole career as a Pokemon trainer,what is it that i wanted,what is it that i have what is it that i will never have?"Tracy : "you've wanted the tag,you got the tag,you will never have a tag permanently with your death the tag will go away or if you don't practice,your skills will go away,if you..wait,i get you you'll never have anything that's not you"

Ash(smile) : "that's the tag,what with,and i basically am warning you this last time,think and phrase properly cause it's about Mist,MY Mist,take your time and speak your heart."

Tracy : "um..bear with me..you wanted Misty,you got Misty but..yes Ash,the Misty we see you'll never have,the Misty you see you'll always have.."

Ash(smile) : "clarity,more clarity"

Tracy : "you two are um..like same thing in two different vessel somehow, so you'll always get paired no matter what but one vessel may blindfold ownself and so on but as it's said the pairing and eventual nonseparablity is

inevitable,so,that is we unnecessarily was worried about both you and Misty,while ourselves having to go through the same realizations in our ownpersonal lives and so on..so,now if similarity applied we better keep absolutely off and we better never say you're her best choice rather saying..um sorry,please Ash..never say you're ber best but only ever choice,Gr..no sorry..that chapter never happened,never existed,it was like a mirage..and if we meet him behave like friend till he brings that up himself,then we'll bite.and we don't meet him on purpose by any means,even if one does it must be Gary,cause he never gave him any consideration and Brock is sternly warned if he wishes to talk to you ever again he has to be like this as well,and if somehow something happens or that Misty is intentionally or casually ever mentioned about that phrases meaning of her personal life by anybody,then that's it the very first time,you'll tell Misty, you're moving away from here but if that goes beyond may god save us and the whole Cerulian City,and it's no warning or threat it's a statement if we don't agree,or Misty somehow in intentionally reminded by otherpeople and we despite having power don't do anything,then that too is,basically you don't want any shadow of any dirty hands on your most..no you own self..yeah i get you,if one lea..um..if the one is not getting ever closer to the other in as fast a rate and for that reason the other is a bit unstable so the support cast has to make sure by every means that it keeps well."

Ash(smile) : "perfect,now another Misty "wanted" me?"

Tracy(Ash speaking inside Tracy's Mind) :

"um..Ash,she also always had you but she..no,no..um..yeah if we never interfared then she would never had had that illusion of ever being not getting closer to you..but you were rude..um,ok..you can solve your own problems but she at first..well later yes right,she was doing your trials as were you and so on..yeah no involvement in personal problems unless purely medical necessities...Misty has always been with you,she's just like that..right and yeah i get you onthat,and you don't hold any grudge against me but if something further happens to Misty,that will be the end of it."

Ash(smile) : "Trace,what has happend?"

Tracy(sigh) : "Nothing,all this is a play of you two of hide and seek just like you and your pokemons,the results here are mere tokens,beneath them what you are you always are and so on..Ash,we just want you and Misty to not play any self destructive game just to prove that

absolutely nothing can separate you two or for the fun of it, and this applies especially for you
Ash, stop this, go to Orange with Misty and we won't keep you preoccupied for long at all, it's just that please just a very few days, have mercy on us.."

Ash(smile) : "Trace, Trace, Trace...the Vultures have only taken a bit of a shock, They're still very much here Trace, i can feel their plans, no i won't make you go thoroughly through their planning again but this is the Ultimate, that i COULD'VE done things differently, COULD'VE shown her less emotion yesterday, Could've..and so on, that is what is happening and has happened COULD'VE been different, but why is it not?(sternly) Trace tell me frankly, the vultures are interrogating that what incentive i've ever given to anyone including Misty to suddenly believe that i was never a playboy at all?"

Tracy(smile) : "Ash, you surely don't need to validate yourself on this point and you know it, what you said last night is exactly that and what neither me nor Daisy can ever forget, cause you just with this recent characteristic language and antics of yours told us exactly what we the couples actually feel between us all the time and that so heartfelt thing you just gave as your answer with your antics and still are doing, (laugh) man really what has happened to the boy that i saw 15 years back, absolutely clueless as to what's happening around him, only ever knowing the goal of becoming a pokemon master and only ever knowing his Misty (both smile) which in fact as i now understand wasn't at all the thing, it was only the illusion of you yourself that was there, you were and still very much are just absolutely oblivious to everything and Misty well it's as you meant, you yourself (both smile)"

Ash(frown) : "the vultures will now easily insinuate that what if i lost sinnoh, what if Mist never left what if i truly have bedded roads.. s.. and only then have realized that they didn't appease me as much as they should so now i'm coming back to old dens..no Trace don't shake your head answer me, the Vultures will continue the what ifs just after the could'ves.."

Tracy(laugh) : "then the answer is what if they never bothered to begin with. that's all"

Ash(smile, hug Tracey) : "Right! so the vultures Trace are for only now returning to their nests only for us to go to Cerulian.. Cerulian, Cerulian.. i would just love to, love to Trace note this down, I'll have my ceremony right in the middle of that godforsaken pool in that goddamn Gym named the f.. central battlefield, where those little brats

have sucked the life out of my eversweet flower slowly match after match,where my little flower was smacked around like a shuttlecock as those doomsday goblins clapped their hands off,exactly where a certain godforsaken sinister boy scout tried to pull off the once in a million dreams stunt by insinuating that my ever beaming flower was using performance enhancements to get to that f.. Hall of Fame book, exactly on the same place,which was searched by the exact f.. brats who were clapping around when my flower was steady,but now were searching,searching to tear off the very last petal off my griefstricken little flower by lebellling her a mental wreck..Trace,i'm hungry..Trace...i'm very hungry.."

Tracy(laughing) : "Ash,they did the same thing to my flower too,so only for this time i agree with your latest rant wholeheartedly"

Ash(smile) : "exactly Trace,you couldn't do it causeyour not that kind of a person,and for my flower and all the other three flowers who are now my family,and all of whom were stressed beyond limits by the sinister Cerulian city with its godforsaken gangs of eternal brats..Trace,i'm starving,make sure when i come back i can have that ceremony there,no not what you think,not that Trace.. that's eventual but what follows-> the ceremony of Vultures,of Cerulian's doomsday rats..i'll induct them one after another personally picking up,minutely,pick up the most wicked of those lambs and induct them to the slaughter house of trash talking and they'll enjoy it,they'll have to clap their impending doom otherwise on that godforsaken day,they won't come out of that goddamn building,ever again to show their croocked faces on this world..Trace i'm hungry make sure i can feed on Cerulian brats one day,they want shows,they want to enjoy themselves,they sucked up the Sensational Sisters till the very end but now there'll have a newshow,The Sensational Sinister,where any godforsaken brat,having the audacity to show up around the Challenger's Identification Centre anytime during 24 hours without 7 league titles and 31 Kanto badges,except from 11-11:15 daytime,will get mentally and verbally and if they're too interested then physically too by their very own pokemons smacked left and right in every battle and they'll have to enjoy the new badge of utter incompetence that will be bestowed upon them day after day if the godforbidden Cerulian wants a peaceful sleep in the night.Trace, Cerulian is in it's very last month of exuberance,that they're known for,but after

that,may they save themselves.(smile)right
Trace,let's go(recalles all pokemons as does
Tracy),no i exactly sensed that mom hasn't started
preparing the lunch so nothing has happened here
and we just after completing all here go to the Lab
to have the Grand Union that's well been 15 years
in making(Tracy laughs)(smile)and i really thoughtthat Daisy would be too excited and Lillie too
dumbstruck to do anything but NOT wanting to
arrange a party, specifically why she sent you to
vulture around(Tracy brusts into laughter)here to
see if we weren't going out anywhere,surely them
Trace,i'll love to go also now that mom is there
and my antics there yesterday,i only wish Violet
could be here but Brock has a little bit left with
me(Tracy shakes his head),so there'll have to be
another day as well(Tracy Laughs)"
Tracy (laughing) : "be our guest Ash,would you
cook?"

Ash(smile) : "with pleasure!"

Tracy(laughing) : "fine but that might be on that
later day special for Brock(Ash laughs)lets go."

Ash(laugh) : "just hang on Trace,we'll to go 7
hours later(laughes uncontrollably)"

Tracy (flustered) : "um.."

Ash(brusts into laughter) : "sweet sweet Trace,just
tell them going on around 3 pm,have something
there,then going to Viridian Lake,where Brock willbe present by evening or afternoon and then
we'll

pass the night there, Tomorrow morning i'm finally
leaving for Pinkenberry with

Charizard,Bulbasaur,Talonflame,I'll decide whether
to take Ganger with me or not later,and i'm going
with ONLY Mist,Dr.Tracy Skechit and Doctor Brock Slate are strictly prohibited
and Dr Tracy Skechit especially in Orange(both brusts into laughter)"

Tracy(laugh) : "you want to show my graveyard
plan?(both brusts into laughter)"

Ash(smile) : "just a suprise Trace,a heaven moving
one,come on.."

.....

and Pikachu just kept staring at you and looking at
me and was very excited and was saying a single
thing consistently,he you know understands me as
well as anybody and he himself was happy to see
you again after a very long time and he was
always on my shoulder the moment during
breakup we last saw each other,he doesn't
understand these things the way we know,hisworldview is totally different than ours,but
probably he must've felt something as we didn't
call and all that,so he was happy and pointing to
your picture in a low voice started constantly
saying one word "Pikachupi!Pikachupi!Pikachupi"
his word for "MISTY"..and i just felt like i was

looking at something so familiar yet so far as if i
was touching something kept in front of me yet
the touch felt like as if it's lives million lives
apart..as if i knew somehow a million years ago in
a live many many lives ago and shared some
memories that were so precious that i just
couldn't move after all these many years later
despite my internal bliss it was only covering a
darkness that i'm touching something long
gone..and Pikachupi flet like warm breeze hitting
my face constantly, without ceasing,and tears
automatically rolled down my cheeks..and(bit
choked)..it was then i first had a glimpse of what
you really are to me..there it actually felt like it's
only me million lifes ago yet so far away and it'sas if just another type of body that i had and i've
ever so longed for a grand union again and it
wasn't like looking at your own 5 year old picture,it
was something way way stronger than anything i
ever have heard,read,seen or experienced that i
can relate to..it was so natural..i forgot actually i
can't really describe what i did see but i didn't see
flesh and blood at all there as by then it i had
become habituated to by analysis and no i didn't
even remember any good things that you may've
ever done to me or who you were etc,Pikachu's
words and this picture had given me the
realization that i never imagined,i just realized as if
someone firmly but gently speaking in my head in
my own voice- "MISTY-that's your soul,you are that
as well and the difference you're making is only
your illusion,you are Misty and Misty is you,no
difference is there,see it for yourself" ..and I don't
know how long i stood there or i just didn't want to
part..here here here..

Misty(deep sigh) : "Ash, you're also a DisasterMaster!why break this moment up?i was seeing
that as well.."

Ash(bit puzzled) : "um..sorry..but(laugh)..i just
realized now that if then,exactly then some vulture
dared to be around and this is another God's
Grace that they didn't,but if they did and disturbed
me or gave the scene to the press,i would've been
very happy to set at that very moment all of my
pokemons on the vulture if i was even remotely
disturbed then or my moment went public,but God
didn't let that happen out of the infinite
compassion,so some vultures were saved and
No,Mist really,if i didn't get you due to some
vulture then disturbing me,my name would've
been written with blood then and there and i knew
nobody present in that building,Lance included
could do anything about me or my pokemons
actions and it wouldn't have been nice and i

would've become a real nerve wreck then as i would've tried to push my pokemons to absolute ultimate,killing them and myself in the process..now so hopefully vultures showed some intelligence there and saved their godforsaken lives and MINE as well..anyhow..vulture is a good name i.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash,i would like that the infinite compassion be helpful to you in restraining me from smacking you the next time you suddenly drag vultures in a most beautiful scene,continue now"

Ash(laugh) : "alright,alright,so the vultur..um,no don't do that(Misty lightly smacks Ash's head),its ok(laugh),so sweet,nostalgia(Misty laughs and again smacks a bit forcefully)..um..ok do that always but gently..(both brusts into laughter)"

Misty(sigh) : "Ash,please you.."

Ash(smile) : "ok,ok,bare with me,i'm just back,so i was in this trace like state and then i was brought back to my senses by a Gentle hand on my shoulders..it was Lance,and i also recognised hat Pikachu had long stopped uttering your name and was constantly looking at me,so i just suddenlywas brought back to my senses and looking at Lance was just startled and didn't know what to say,in the mean time Noivern had put the picture back and is now standing beside me,i called him back but i had no words at all in my head,then Lance very gently broke the silence saying,that he knew Professor Oak as well as and knew me for ages,in his words->

Lance : "Ash! you alright?"

Ash(stuttering) : "um..it's all right..i just..um.."

Lance(kind face) : "Lost in thoughts?"

Ash(thoughtfull) : "yeah i guess"

Lance : "Ash you've been standing like this for 10 minutes at least as i've entered here and was just observing you and i left you here 15 minutes ago,so it must be 25 minutes then or there about.Ash, the tears"

and then i suddenly realized i cried a bit and quickly wiped off the tears and

Ash : "um..no it's alright Lance..i just.."

Lance : "Ash, it's alright,i know her well,Misty was your constant travel companion for 5 long years and then she came to Cerulian Gym and did brilliantly and she was also.."

I don't know Mist,but suddenly these past tense words - "was,came,did,was"..became unbearable to me and i brust out in a bit of choked but high pitched voice

Ash(bit choked,bit high pitched) : "Please,enough!"

Lance : "Ash.."

Ash : "um..sorry..but she's still alive and it just felt

a bit..um..well.. awkward,anyhow um..sorry for shouting at you Lance..i'm terrib.."

Lance : "Ash,it's all right,you were wanting to know more about Misty right?"

Ash : "Lance it's ok..i'll just ask someone else..your responsibilities.."

Lance(firmly shrugging off) : "Ash,i know my responsibilities and restrictions,i can tell you about Misty Waterflower from Cerulian City Gym and Frontier symbol all that i reliably and personally know,but you must stay here tonight aswe have to finish with this,you've been absent from the dinner for too long,you must comply with me"..

see i took the chance because..please this is just jokingly..i politely asked Lance if i could mouth the press off and if i sworeed mag he spare me,Lance smiled and said that he himself will get rid of the press and will finish the night as quickly as possible and besides not much was left of it..so,anyhow i couldn't thrash the vultures then and there for for their campaign to ruin my personal life and so again Lance saved himself and vultures..thus it happened.."

Misty : "um..Ash,we better go and eat something"

Ash : wait just a bit..

.....

Ash : "so,as i was saying,then i just returned to your picture and Noivern kept holding it and i kept gazing at you,i did it just to recreate the moment and Lance obliged"

Misty(blush a bit) : "um..Ash,i may again have toface Lance very soon.."

Ash(smile) : "na,it's alright with him, your like his second daughter or even much younger i guess, it's alright,but here you must bear with me again as i want to contrast the reasons why other people thought we're made for each other"

Misty(smile) : "ya,i would."

Ash(smile) : "alright,Lance told me as i was again tendering the picture,that what you were upto with your activities and overwork, suddenly turning on the Frontier Symbol for pestering you and then creating legal skirmish,besides if that brat is ever seen again at Cerulian or anywhere in the world, i would also like to battle him,but unlike you,i'll do it illegally.."

Misty : "yes Ash,i had to,he was pestering me first due to my name and fame and all that,then when he got a rude awakening there he started name calling and dragging my friends and family into it and doing all that,so i had to take actions as all my sisters supported me and we got rid of him fromthere and while busting we we found out he was using illegal performance enhancers and all

that,so his water pokemons were added to me,others went to different labs,well Gary managed to take the 90% actually..haha..he was extending the lab then so he began and actually it was a good advertisement as well...anyhow that was almost two years ago but you can continue now"

Ash(tendering Misty's cheeks) : "No Mist,i shouldn't have left you just like that,anyhow..lets reminisce,so Lance told the stories and all about you and your recent problems,i almost instantly knew that you actually was only longing to see me and were entrapped in a golden cage with the huge responsibility of polishing it everyday,so you finally resorted to your pokemons and gym and frontier and all else and it did get you in Hall of Fame but you weren't all right..by the way Green met me in Jhoto Elite 4,my first,and was trying to imply that i was needed near my hometown evenbefore i got started saying that when would i go to Kanto Elite 4,cause the Elite 4 will retire and all that and yeah he did you a real friend's favour by trying to approach me,as soon as he extracted my news from Brock,but as soon as i asked him from where he was from and why so much sympathy from Lance suddenly,and then i held him up and rang Lance and so that he wasn't the messenger was proved,and i just politely asked him that why was he so desperate himself being a good enough Pokemon trainer having won Orange League,and he stammered a bit and then i pressed him for his hometown address,he had to admit that he was from Cerulian,as soon as i heard that name i told him there's no need to pull such stunts on me i've not yet won a singke Elite 4,winning only 6 leagues and threatened him that if he pesters me further,i'll personally love to battle him and snatch away is Orange League trophy cause mine just got a bit lonely and i'll do all this by means of pokemon battling,to which he cringed but still being aLeague Champion he felt humiliated and just afreed to battle me,but said i would only after the Elite 4 match and forced him to stay and watch,and i did have a great match fortunately and the Elite 4 himself recognized my abilities,so Green got a bit awestruck but was still willing to battle,and i have big respect for him as he reminded me of myself but just before we started i trash talked him in the press without naming which got him angry and he was about to get physically involved with me,then i told him personally that listen mate,just tell me the reason for your desparation and obsession with me i feel physically threatened compelling me to take legal

actions against him, to which he was infuriated and said to look up who he was which is from there his things were known and then he was still saying things to which I said just spit it out, and he said that I mingled with his girlfriend, but as soon as he said that I myself told him if she was still your girlfriend and has been with me just forget her and save himself and that it's not my fault that people like him would throw themselves at my door.. which rather pushed him back. then the press created a fuss but I suppressed his name and got it changed so he had been grateful to me and just shook my hands and left, but he made me more screwed up after the Serena fiasco months apart and I said well this can be fun, and just about truly started my antics.."

Misty(sigh) : "Ash, I did know Green went to you but I didn't know he pestered around like that, (smile and frown) we'll have to answer many people at Cerulian.."

Ash(irritated) :

"Cerulian! Cerulian, Cerulian, Cerulian! except for my flower there's nothing good there and just last night they proved me right again, and my flower was accidentally there, it could've been Viridian, it could've been Venus as well, Cerulian"

Misty(laugh) : "sorry Ash, but I just love it how you hate my hometown with a particular passion, but you never did before"

Ash(irritated) : "no cause I didn't fully comprehend my cherished flower and thought it would be just like any City, but since then and especially since I now know their infatuation with Sensational Sisters and that Gym, that was your sweat and tears and took it for granted, I can't but be delighted now to go there and perform, and no even last evening I wasn't bothered but then they created a fuss there in the shop, they owe a big performance from me and it'll be in the local press where I finally will get my hands at precious Cerulian f.. sorry"

Misty(laugh) : "anyway it's my hometown, just spare it a thought before you reign havoc there"

Ash(smile) : "sorry Mist, but on this one I can't give you any guarantees but as I'll have to also be in that godforsaken place myself I'll spare the Gym.. you'll know that I praised the leader to

heaven and demoted the support cast at the same Gym to hell, and I'll spare this gym.. "Misty : "much appreciated, now continue"

Ash(smile) : "yes, then Lance told me that Misty Waterflower is a famous name throughout Kanto and other places may be as well and that my teenage travel companion Misty and Misty Waterflower, Cerulian Gym leader were two very

different persons as if i didn't know it already,he i guess thought i had a teenage crush kinda thing rekindled and probably didn't forget her and due to your condition he thought if he could help(laugh).. I don't get this infatuation of people not letting a person be happy AND single.."

Misty(solemn) : "Ash,i wasn't happy at all,that was the whole reason things started"

Ash : "yeah a mess that almost defeated me had it not been for that day there..anyhow,he went on and told me about your present state a bit and then said i'll agree that i'll help,to which i said indeed if such is the case i'll be very happy to help my long lost dear friend,which he also agreed but then despite knowing my abilities tried to advise me that you have picked up a bit of a bad name and they suspect you might soon get your hands dirty with illegal business,as soon as he said illegal,i scoffed that i helped busting team rocket and i've had enough experience with illegal things which he said he just cautioned me because he thought i liked that picture but i might get a rude awakening,i politely said if he gives me protection i'll do my maximum but i said please i don't want to hear a word more on the past,present or future Misty Waterflower and I don't like anybody telling me anything about my childhood friends no matter what they've become now..so then i set things up with Lance,came out for the first week gauged whether i really wanted it or not,then once i knew the answer is yes,the next two weeks i planned on what i shall do contacted my family and all that,but the biggest thing was my infighting and once i won that just the night before i handcuffed you(smile,holding Misty's hands and imitating),from then on i knew i've got you back50%,full from my part,and the rest depends upon you..so yes, that's how i came back.."

Misty(clap and smile) : "Bravo,no first you saved me second we married third we had to pass a sleepless first night due to hoot-hoots..(laugh)"

Ash(laugh) : "see vulture is a better word"

Misty(smirk) : "Its vulpic,only that you're not allowed to use it"

Ash(smile) : "right(phone rings Serena),right Vulture Time(shows phone,brusts into laughter,Misty shakes her head again with a faint and Pikachu just kept staring at you and looking at me..and i smile)

Ash: "No Mist,go help Mom or take rest here,i'm talking all day since yesterday noon,let me get this,later if she wants you can"

Misty(tendering Ash's cheeks) : "don't take too much strain, she's a mere kid"

Ash(smile) : "ok,hellow,Serena,how may i come into your service?"

Serena : "um..Ash,i just thought as you saidyesterday.."

Ash(sternly) : "you're in Unova,it's night there and you should be either sleeping or studying or training,why are you in my room?"

Serena : "um..just wanted to know?"

Ash : "if she ever liked the shape of the ring and.."

Serena(sternly) : "Ash,this is too much, you're mar.."

Ash(sternly) : "MARRIED TO MISTY

KETCHUM,record it and make it your alarm tone"

Serena(dissapointed) : "i called you to say i'm going to have my 4th Gym battle day after tomorrow.."

Ash(irritated) : "You have about 5000 people there who've spent their entire god damn lives exactly around where your staying now,but i would know more than them?from here?"

Serena : "just give Misty the phone,none can talk with you.."

Ash(laugh) : "including?"

Serena(scream) : "hey don't get me started ok,ialso need advise on..um.."

Ash : "Boyfriends?"

Serena(hesitant) : "um..yes"

Ash(laugh) : "that you wanted Sam but Sam is all over..?"

Serena(iritated) : "hey stop that, that's none of your business,just i want to congratulate you and Misty and also tell you that this perfectly makes me happy as this erases off my mistake entirely and from now on i'll not need to call you.THANK YOU"

Ash(laugh) : "yeah bye!(angry) Little godforsaken brats.."

.....(Misty and Delia downstairs)...

Delia : "dear,you look a bit worn out.."

Misty(smile) : "um..no just too much talking,i'm habituated though Gyms are hard places.."

Delia(points out Misty's ring) : "so happy,Mist,your officially Ketchum now.."

Misty(giggle) : "thanks Mom.."

Delia : "did he fetch that before.."

Misty(bit ashamed) : "yes,Mom that's what he did"Delia(bit concerned) : "he has changed quite a bit in these 3 years,his language also isn't very polite i can sense.."

Misty(nervously) : "um..yeah a bit rough..he's just a bit tired but won't stop working"

Delia(concerned) : "well,he surely knows how to scare people"

Misty(smile) : "that i have to agree with"

Delia(smile) : "Mist,when are you going out today?"

Misty : "um..you mean date?"

Delia(smile) : "right."

Misty(nervously) : "well..we had yesterday but today..well..um..we haven't decided on that yet.."

Delia(frown) : "Mist, is everything all right, you can and in fact should be frank you know.."

Misty(laugh) : "i'm sorry mom for laughing, but don't worry at all, he's as sweet as ever, just a bit tired, you know the press hasn't been kind to him, so he still just thinks that he has to logically validate every moment of his life and give his analysis or the result of it to anyone concerned in a rather colourful way that in his mind will give the press a good beat-down"

Delia(smile and concerned) : "i see, no my little Ash never could do anybody any harm but i guess you should get this trash talking checked, it's not at all good"

Misty(smile) : "i'm being right at it but it'll take time, he had just been living a lonely life, it'll just take him some time to come into terms with his new surroundings"

Delia(smile) : "but enough about him, how are you, my little doll?"

Misty(giggle) : "fine mom, just fine"

Delia(looking at Misty's ring holding her hand) : "very beautiful. but Mist, you should take rest as well, you yourself weren't in a good health and much emotion overnight.."

Misty(smile) : "i'm fine mom, i've had too many sleepless nights because of the Gym and other things, i'm habituated like that for the past 12 years, rather last night was the best sleepless night till date"

Delia(smile) : "happy to know my little doll, but um..Ash might also not be prepared to take you out for a dinner because he thinks that the press.."

Misty(laugh) : "um..sorry for laughing mom, but it's just the effects of his antics throughout the night..i've been entertained beyond imagination, but no he has refused to take me out on a date or to dance or giving me a flower bouquet-refusal in all accounts"

Delia(very concerned) : "my God!..what's the matter.."

Misty(laughing) : "he would rather run away with me to unknown destinations"

Delia(smile) : "too much imagination(Misty bursts into laughter), besides Mist, he's fine at home."

Misty(smile) : "mom, it's just that press bug that's bitten him for such a long time and to such an extent, he just can't yet get over it, so that's his definition of complete solitude"

Ash(outside) : "Mom,food,and overwork that little Mimey of yours, don't let my Mist work at all,she's...um,i just want her with me here right now and all the time"

Delia(smile) : "also my Mist too, remember that,and leave Mimey alone"

Ash(irritated) : "mom,please,but,if you don't allow me to um..well..gaze at my Mist all i want,then i'll get Mime to battle,there you little brat.."

Delia(frown) : "Ash, that's impolite,and leave Mimey right now."

Ash(wrestling with Mime,comes near) : "Mime is pestering me ever since..why you little brat, you're no good for..mom where's my food"

Misty(surprized) : "where are you going?"

Delia(taking Mime away,scowl&frown) : "Ash wait there in the table,Mist will take both of your foods,and don't runaway with Mist so quickly(laugh)"

Ash(dissappointed) : "yeah,so you've decided that i should be away from Mist.."

Delia(frown,comes to Ash) : "what's wrong with you honey?calm down, you always too agitated,too active all the time,Mist is coming,let her prepare the dishes.."

Ash(irritated,sitting) : "Mist come quickly,and why can't Mime prepare the dishes and no i'm a bit excited and yes,i'm going to the farm."

Delia(frown) : "Ash,just wait here be calm honey,i've got to ask you something"

Misty (comes with dishes) : "here are the..(Ash tries to take off the dishes and hug Misty)

Ash,what are you.."

Delia(frown) : "Ash.."

Ash(hugging Misty) : "ah! that's what i wanted,no a bit later.."

Misty(scoffs) : "Ash,mom is here its rude!"

Ash(hugging Misty) : "no if you hug me back,i'll not say a thing while i'm at the table,and mom being here makes no difference, it's not a vulgar st.."

Misty(hugging Ash quickly,then scoffing) : "that's it.Ash,are you out of your mind?calm down,don't make a fuss"Ash(sitting down) : "no i'm done,will eat very slowly and sorry mom and Silence"

Delia(frown) : "Misty,just sit down honey"

Misty : "yeah,just these things.."

(finally everyone sits down)

Delia(observing Ash) "Mist,can you tell me something,I don't know much about training and battling but i do know Mimey more than anyone,what is wrong with Ash?"

Ash(scowl) : "Mom your not insin..um,sorry suggesting that.."

Misty(angry,shouts) : "Ash!just eat silently!"

Delia(very concerned) : "Mist,please,why is he behaving like this,and no it's not just now since the day he has returned,he's been like that,Mimey's too excited all the time and wants to play around so does Ganger and those two,Pikachu seems pretty indifferent to Ash,what is it?these Dark Types aren't good Ash,you know.."

Misty(smile) : "Mom,please calm down i'll explain everything..no Ash,not you and you're not leavingtill i'm finished,Pikachupi,come to Misty,baby(Pikachu jumps to Misty),right,and No Ash you're staying silent"

Delia(bit shivering voice) : "Mist.."

Misty(smile) : "Mom,we don't have anything to hide from you but it's a kind of a trade secret..he's an once only living legend in Pokemons Training and hence he's so important to the world.."

Ash(scoff) : "Mist is in.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash"

Ash(grim) : "very well,but mention yourself,she doesn't know.."

Misty(frowns at Ash,back to Delia,smiling) :

"Mom,he has unfathomable powers over Pokemons, especially on his own ones,and even in general that aren't his,he can instantly gauge them and if he so wants get attuned to their nerves and the whole combination then becomes very absolutly invincible in battling,and those like Mime,who've been with him for 16 years,and you know Mime too is a Psychic type thus can beextremely powerful if she wants to be-but just like she and Ganger,Noivern and Gerninja,Ash's nerve's state affects them a bit...they always are too playful..."

Delia(concerned) : "um..Mist,that doesn't seem to be a very good thing,is it like an obsession?"

Misty(smile) : "exactly the opposite,Ash's own nature is getting reflected in Mime and all them,Pikachu is an exception due to his own temperament and he can't be automatically affected just by Ash's presence,he has to be warmed up,so he's indifferent it seems and he's also able to catch Ash's nerve states,he's just irritated with him that he's always playfull and not battling anymore..see mom i myself have two such pokemon,one Golduck and a Gyarados and i can affect pokemons too but they won't show visible characteristics like this because my temperament is different to Ash and so are our pokemons,i'll show you Golduck later,but that's my own bunch and on opposite side i can affect thembut it's very limited and difficult...Ash's level is impossible to gauge..but this thing is there for trainers that can affect opposite pokemons and it's just trade secret as we call it, it's very seleted

people in this world can do this successfully and this power might be abused as well thus the secrecy but the trainers at this level if comes naturally,like Ash had automatically comes to know this a long time ago and now it's absolutely natural to him,infact now this Pikachu alone is enough to mat some 120 other Pikachus who've won 4 leagues and and 70 Pikachus who have won 6 or 7,like Ash has,Pikachu can alone face the whole Elite 4 and their Pikachus at one time and still will just laugh them off if he is focused enough,and Ash's level is once only,none ever has went there and Ash is 29 and only growing by manifolds by day,he can hold sway over his opponents at mere will no matter who they are,there can be other pokemon trainers who has a special power over only his or one specific typeof pokemons but Ash can do it to anybody and even laugh off legendaries,given he's mind is focused and he wants to face them,if Ash wishes he can tame Legendary Pokemons for some times and even after that phase,but i would actually claim,though he won't but no it's not my bragging but a true fact that with his practices and all,Ash is unmatched in terms of Mastery over Pokemons given he is focused and ready with a clear mind that really wants to battle or Master over a pokemon and that's why he's so sought after, simply put there's have never been anyone ever like him(beams and blushes,Delia smiles but a bit flustered)"

Ash : "and Mist is.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash,please,just stay silent"

Delia(bit flustered) : "um..well..i see...his dad always had this dream now he has done it..but he must be lonely.."

Ash(brusting into laughter) : "mom,mom,mom,of course i was lonely and hence my troubles,but i'mno more and yes i feel too lonely especially if I can't hug my Mist all I want,if so then i'll become more playfull and so would Mimey and she'll then go to battles,so you see i have a deal.."

Misty(frown) : "Ash,stop that, don't talk like this with mom"

Ash(grim) : "but..i'm not harm.."

Delia(smile) : "no honey,you never can harm but are you not going to obey your mommy because your all powerfull now?"

Ash(blush,solemn) : "mom,what the..?you know what i'm.."

Delia(smile) : "absolutely honey,i do,just remember that press will not be after you unless you wish them too and even if the press is around you,you still don't have to give rigourous motives behind

your each actions get it?

Ash(grim, dissapointed) : "yes mom."

Delia(smile) : "are you dissapointed with that?"

Ash(beaming) : "nope."

Delia(smile) : "that's my sweet boy.by the way,andno not you Ash cause you won't have any control over your language is you're excited in this state,Mist will herself briefly say about her success with Pokemons"

Ash : "huh! then basically i should.."

Misty and Delia unison(smile) : "no, silence"

Ash(grim) : "fine"

Misty(smile) : "um,mom i've also been accepted into Water Gym Leader's hall of fame and like him i'm also among the top.."

Ash : "THE TOPPEST"

Misty(frown) : "Ash, didn't we agree that you'll be silent?"

Delia(sternly) : "Ash,just.shut.up. say Mist"

Misty(laugh): "um..sorry mom..yeah,i'm also among the top water Pokemon trainers and Gym leaders"

Ash(whinnying) : no i'll interrupt every time,she IS THE,no please Mist,bear with me,please.."

Delia(smile) : "ok Mist,i'll bear with his language,besides i must know what my little dollhas done too,please Mist,this time, let's just bear with him together,but Ash,if you cross the line,i'll not listen to you"

Ash(sticking his toungue out to Misty) : "yeah!"
(everyone brusts into laughter)

Ash(smile) : "Mist is THE TOPMOST water pokemon gym leader in THE world but may be not,i'm having to say may be because else the vultures will insinuate that(Delia and Misty shake their heads)(smiling) yeah, that's my eloquence(Delia,Misty both laugh)...anyhow,the vultures will insinuate that there are 7 regions in this world where things are vastly different,Cerulean,a name that i'm not fond of at all except when it's associated with my flower(Delia a bit puzzled,then smiles,Misty blushes), (smile)that's the name(Delia laughs and pats Misty,Misty blushes) being a seaside city,its kinda easy,kinda natural,kinda understandable,kinda taken for granted that the Gym,if there is one,will be a Water Pokemon gym and if Pallet had a waterpokemon Gym then suddenly to the vultures it becomes a problem that because the Geography is different,so is the Pokemon and so the trainers are a bit different,but i've been everywhere,i've never seen a 17 year old kid being able to handle a Gyarados to the extend where she made it like Mime is to you mom,at the age of 17 and her Gyarados could use flamethrower as good as my

Charizard could and you know him,i still can't beat her Gyarados one on one and she had all the power over it at the age of 17,and on that day if she challenged me,all of my then present pokemons would've lost not even making Gyarados a bit tired and i had 4 or something that day,excluding Pikachu,and Pikachu doesn't battle Mist,even if i kill him he still won't and no that day he too would've been laughs off by Mist and Gyarados and the only time i could persuade my chu-bro to was when he rather kinda did a fake fight,this is when i took my flower here to me from the godforsaken(Misty&Deliafrowns)..sorry..Cerulean vultures who yesterday had the audacity to imply to me that i've abducted their flower..MIST is MY FLOWER ONLY(Misty blushes and scowls and frowns,Delia smiles and pats Misty),but the trouble is that they would rather clap her to death than to help her to stand and then they.."

Delia(sigh) : "Ash, it's about Mist,not your vultures" (Misty shakes her head)

Ash(smile) : "right,my dear sweet flower can push her Gyarados now to a level which she told you about and then this Gyarados isn't her strongest Pokemon at all,it is Golduck and Dewgong and Starmie,who she had at like 1 year birthday present.."

Misty(laugh) : "5"

Ash(smile) : "right,5 year present,and there are many more,so the vultures finally had to budge else they would've abjectly humiliated themselves but the hallowed Cerulian City for the love of God never bothered,they wanted more and more and every day every hour there would be this damn arrogant brat who'd challenge only to show that he was a failure as a celebrated boy scout or girl cheerleader(Delia and Misty frowns)..anyhow..stup...alright(both laughs).. but my flower still had to appease those brats by giving them a badge and fighting them,this badge they got will be the only in their god damn lives and thus my flower was getting drained more and more mentally and physically and the all caring Cerulian might was doing was to cheer her slow death...so.."

Delia(solemn) : "Mist,i heard you weren't well,but this really was too much.."

Misty(smile) : "mom,i'm now very well and no had he been there at this form of his,i wouldn't have needed to work or perform at all,money would've poured into the Gym simply by this rate of trash talk even with his wife and mother,long live the vultures Ash,really"

(Misty and Delia bursts into laughter)Ash(smile) : "good break,thanks for the refreshments Mist,and this will be long

(Misty and Delia again bursts into laughter)..then there was the king of brats in the neighbouring Frontier Symbol,which i'm just too tired to explain but mom remember the job offer that i rejected ? this is this Battle Frontier's gym.anyhow this brat conspiring with our well known Cerulian all-knowers,tried to totally destroy my little flower there but then as i've told you,my flower is once only and so she can just deximate any goddamn weed pretending to be trees without just like an wink,and so this frontier Symbol had to be out over my flower cause the conspiring Elite4 thought that would be moral,which she barely was able to manage,it's like two gyms in one building and you can understand the workload that my flower had to bear alone and then the Cerulian brats came up with a new plan,they were sending..Mist this will become personal"

Misty(grim) : "Ash, just give it a break,would you?"Delia(concerned) : "what did they do to her Ash?"

Ash(solemn) : "Mist, you're seeing my moods but mom needs to know,she has an idea about both of us, especially you,though..."

Delia(scoff) : "Ash,are you.."

Misty(sigh) : "not again,Ash,i'm not going to listen (hugs Delia)"

Ash(solemn) : "Mom,you've taught me to be honest with myself first,you want that today?"

Delia(frown) : "i understand,yes,Mime, don't allow anyone in at any cost no matter who,you too Pikachu just protech the house(both leave)"

Ash : "and hold onto your daughter and cajole her,i've caused her what pain i'll tell you now"

Delia(concerned, hugging Misty) : "i see,no dear please,your with your mom"

Misty : "mom..just tell him to say it as a comedy,he's been repeating this throughout the night..(hugging Delia)"

Delia(scowl at Ash,hugging Misty) : "Ash you've just heard her,and i order you now make it asbearable as possible,and my dear Mist,i'm telling Ash that if he repeats it again,then he'll not.."

Ash : "MOM,i got you.it'll be so Mom,just hold onto her"

Delia(scowl) : "Ash start and don't cross any limit"

Ash : "as you say,mom.right,Mom you know about Serena and you also know i was kissed accidentally in public,these were accidents and before them there was one and that was the first for us both me and Mist that was the only time i did that on my own wish and her wish also

matched mine. Mist fell for me almost from the first sight and you know all of it, but... this is funny Mist.. then the vultures started to peek around me especially after the Sinnoh Miracle, as you know and no i didn't cheat on her but my ego swelled a bit too much and eventually we separated, the real fun starts now, so the Cerulian brats came up with a particular plan that now since my flower was a bit depressed and alone, these would circulate over and you know mom, the irony is that i wasn't there at all, i was in heaven, well according to vultures, anyhow, both she and me were tortured beyond measures by the vultures and they were circling around me as well, we took the same measure in different forms, she continued to withdraw herself, i continued to attack them.. the only thing was that i was moving around so i in a way was in a much more favourable condition, which um well.. helped me to anticipate if anybody wanted to fall for me, and to cut the long story short, you're seeing that except for my flower none did. and she has been hearing me spit this out to whoever that dared to challenge me and my flower yesterday, got thrown at mercilessly by me, but it hurts her, no only Daisy, Tracy and Brock got this, they're all family, so it's not that the vultures can do anything about or with it. but she still agreed to go through that again just now after going completely sleepless last night, because i told her to bear with me and i told her i don't hide anything from my mom, so she's bearing it now and will so too if i tell the same to the vultures no matter the consequences and she will do it because i'm cherished to her and there's no other reason at all. that's exactly what she was doing when Cerulian brats were hovering around and my sweet flower couldn't take it anymore shut herself up in her room and only attending to pokemon and all was actually dying slowly, as she was taking (), cause she couldn't bear my separation which is why i went to doctor with her yesterday first thing in Safford, but as soon as i returned to her you can see the result and i've not been and not being kind to her either.. so if you ever had anything that the vultures told you about me believe all of it and more, but as far as your daughter goes, you can as well treat it as a bad dream. i don't need to tell you whether i reciprocate my flower's feeling for me to her or not, and thus the all conquering Cerulian brats and their master the vultures just abjectly failed in another endeavour. but they'll be at it again but the only thing is that next time i'll be there and i.. anyhow, that's the story"

Delia (tendering Misty's head) : "good enough"

Ash, but this is the last time you said this and if it's

not then.."

Misty(raising her head from the table,with a bit of tear) : "mom, that's Ash's power i was talking about(a bit shivering voice)am i wrong Ash?"

Ash : "no,you're not Mist!"

Delia(tendering Misty) : "ok let's leave and let him entertain his vultures all he wants"

Ash(laugh) : "mom,please i'll leave ,only if I can hug my flower once more,um twice..um thrice..

Delia(tendering Misty) : "do it as many times,but.."

Ash(sigh) : "my power is that i'll trash talk people and tell them such bare truths that the honesty of me will connect with them and their pokemons if pokemons are involved,and then if i want i can extract any secret i want and in the battle it'll mean if you had Mimey and i came without any pokemons,100 such Mime's won't cop with me cause they'll want to play with me all the time and be my pokemon rather so what to speak if i have 84 pokemons myself? thus i can make people tell the absolute truth cause i had to face it from close stare and this'll be if able to help you,you good,if not my bad.Mist has the same powers but her temperaments is different so she can never do what i'm upto,and those who think water pokemon trainers cant handle electeic types they may test Pikachu with Mist and that'll be their last sane day here..anyhow..i know many more things but my only weapon is that and you already know it as do Pikachu,Mime and so on,i took my flower through it,and my flower follows me no matter what i do to her so i had to pick her up from the godforsaken Cerulian City's goddamn Gym and now has put here at my home.this is where i live,my flower now is my family.the end."

Delia(smile) : "i get you,but your process is only good for vultures,and yes hug Mist now"

Ash(smile) : "right.(hugging Misty) there there

Mist,you want to hear the flower song again now which was mine not Cerulian"

Misty(blush,hugging Ash quickly) : "later"

...(Mr Mime comes in)..

Delia(frown) : "Mimey who is it? didn't i tell you none allowed?"

Mr Mime :

Ash(irritated) : "Tracy!Tracy,Tracy,Tracy,Tracy,i'm killing him today,Pikachu thunder chair.."

Delia(concerned) : "Ash.."

Misty(smile) : "Mom,he has to mean it..."

...(Pikachu doesn't allow Tracy to enter)...

Tracy : "um..Ash.."

Ash(hugging Misty) : "i'm busy with Mist,get off or else.."

Tracy : "Ash,please it's Golduck"

Misty : "um..Ash i should go.."
 Ash : "i'm going too"
 Delia(concerned) : "don't hit him"
 Ash : "don't send Mime,i'll hit both then"
 Delia(self) : "nah!had it not been for Mist,he
 would've gone mad completely(smile) that'sactually what he is expressing to Mist..(pooe
 boy).."
(outside)...
 Misty(talkes Golduck) : "thanks Trace.(leaves)"
 Tracy : "Mi.."
 Ash : "hey you en.. don't call my wife, don't talk
 with her,don't pester her, don't come near her,dont
 look at her,don't.."
 Tracy(laughing) : "Ash,man you need rest.."
 Ash(laugh) : "i need rest?"
 Tracy : "um..ok,i get it but you're only making it
 more and more.."
 Ash(scowl,smile) : "sweet sweet Trace,tell me why
 is it that the vultures are around here?"
 Tracy : "um..i'm leaving..(trying to flee) "
 Ash(releases Noivern) : "right Trace stand in front
 of me,yeah here(recalls Noivern,Pikachu jumps
 onto Ash's lap)see Pikachu doesn't exactly like
 you..so it's better that you comply"
 Tracy : "this is pure blackmailing.."
 Ash(angry) : "you f.. brat,shut the f.. up.who calledme in the middle of the night to torture my
 already
 stressed sweet flower even more.."
 Tracy (smile) : "Ash,Misty will forgive me but you
 were.."
 Ash(extremely angry) : "so when are you releasing
 my speech to international aud.."
 Tracy(grim) : "Ash,please.."
 Ash(angry) : "the silver screen,the radio,the tv,the
 internet,the gramophone,the godforsaken mobile.."
 Tracy(laugh) : "we won't be able to express it in
 front of.."
 Ash(angry) : "My wife?huh? isn't it,My wife? what
 is exactly Trace that everyone is concerned
 suddenly so much about my wife,huh?what do you
 want? do you want to see whether she truely longs
 for me or not if i just choke.."
 Tracy(solemn) : Ash,please,be patient"
 Ash(brusts into anger,but not high pitch) : "No i
 wont,what can you do about it?what can the
 vultures do about it? the press,the cinema,the
 internet,the radio,the roads.. s..,the most beautifulenu.."
 Tracy(sigh) : "Ash get into the Hall of Fame
 formally and just don't get into farming."
 Ash(grim) : "cause Misty..no,what is it that now
 you're so concerned?,no let me finish..what would
 my wife lose with those not being done? that's you

point ain't it?"

Tracy : "Ash,Misty.."

Ash(frown) : "that's it.it's always been Ash and Misty and blah,blah,blah,beautiful b.. has come and gone,f.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,please spare these for another day,you're going to Cerulian or stay.."

Ash(frown) : "so your saying that according to the vultures,the husband should enjoy f.. man-wh.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,take rest and let me go please or talk about Pokemons"

Ash(grim) : "no i'll tak about anything with you if only you don't drag Mist in and more importantly,what is it Trace huh?you want me to show you that my ge.."
Tracy(shout) : "Ash! please, don't tourture yourself like this and..oh no.."

Ash(laugh) : "my wife? isn't it? my wife? why and how..no if you dare leave or stop me,i'll set you on Thunder Chair immediately...what is it that people are infatuated with Mist,huh?yes,she has a less black skin,yes she's less at bay with battles,yes she's less unfamiliar in hall of less mediocrity? and? i know what they're thinking but I can be brutal as well,you still can't..no i don't care and nobody comes anywhere near me if i'm home,else they know the result..get over the fact that how can a once eber sweet flower like that wasn't picked up by someone other that the f.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash! could you doubt yourself if you heard those words in the middle of.."

Ash(laughing) : "words?"

Tracy : "exactly not Ash,that was your.."

Ash(angry) : "not this dumbnut again,ITS ME,not mine,and so now i've pulled off a stunning publicity stunt,Deceit Mastery,(laugh)on one sideto blindfold the family and on the hand hand to go to the b.."

Tracy(smile) : "Ash,they are none except Misty for you."

Ash(laugh) : "so you've finally been able to get around the fact that if a Rhyhorn f.. someone else's sl.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,please,would you argue with me without these words?"

Ash(smile) : "most gladly"

Tracy(smile) : "well,same as yesterday,staring 1.what you see in Misty that you don't see in others?"..

Ash(angy) : "i'm warning you last time Trace,my Mist is not a selling product,if you are insinuating..if anybody..no that's it,from exactly this moment on,if,especially a half-grown en.. like you,manages two words with Mist and look at her,I

won't be able to restrain myself but to personally make sure that doesn't go home alive.."

Tracy(sigh) : "Ash,this is your sketch..(hands over the sketch)"

Ash(looking at the Sketch) : "thanks Trace.but hey hand me over the other ones?"

Trace(taken aback) : "Ash"

Ash(smirk) : "Green,Rudy and Georgio and if there's more,i'm personally going to erase all of those godforsaken names that you're hiding behind your fake smile.."

Tracy(forcefully hugging Ash) : "Ash,please for her,stop killing yourself like this slowly,she can't lose..."

Ash(laugh) : "for her?for her? Trace you tell me, except her sisters does she ever had anyone else? huh?no,no i need to understand this infatuation that Brock has had the courage to honestly present in front of me,and i'm as you know,would ever be most happy if i could atleast atleast with my own very hands killed ONE vulture from a group who insinuates that i'm the BEST choice that my..no you've crossed

limits(Ganger,Noivern,Geninja)Nivy,take Pikachu with you,(Very Sternly)Pikachu!buddy!tell professor Oak to send over all pokemons i've ever had and all those who wants to be present wi